School ‘Swap’ through the Fair Access Panel (FAP) as an Alternative to Permanent Exclusion: A Case Study Presenting the Perspective of a Student, Parent and Staff Member.

Helen Rowe

Research thesis submitted in part requirement for the Doctor of Educational and Child Psychology

Department of Educational Studies, University of Sheffield

May 2019
Abstract

Research suggests that hundreds of children and young people (CYP) are excluded from school every day for ‘disruptive behaviours’, many of which have additional and complex needs and family backgrounds. Recognition of the negative consequences of exclusion over time has led to various alternatives. This research thesis focuses on a ‘school swap’ through the ‘Fair Access Panel’ as an alternative to permanent exclusion. I argue that whilst falling short of an ‘official’ ‘exclusion’, this process is nevertheless exclusionary, since the young person is effectively removed from school. Research on so-called ‘grey’ exclusionary practices is limited, despite them becoming more common.

This thesis presents a case study involving a young person, parent and staff member, whereby the young person has remained at the ‘swap’ school. A narrative approach is adopted, seeking stories of participants nine months after the ‘swap’ occurred. Stories were gathered through semi-structured interviews alongside narrative based prompts, and data is analysed using ‘The Listening Guide’.

This thesis provides recommendations and reflects on best practice for CYP who are ‘at risk’ of exclusion. It contributes to wider literature highlighting the unjustness of the current educational climate for vulnerable children, young people and families.
## Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction and rationale for research</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 1: Critical Literature Review</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Overview</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• School exclusion in context</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• ‘Disruptive behavior’: A historical examination.</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Behaviour: Becoming a problem</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Exclusion: A social injustice</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• An alternative to exclusion?</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Supporting CYP at risk of exclusion</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Questions and limitations</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i. A fresh start?</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. The views of CYP and families</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii. ‘Unofficial’, ‘hidden’ and ‘grey’ exclusion?</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Summary</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Research Questions</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter 2: Methodology</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Overview</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Positioning</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Social constructionism, critical realism and feminist positioning</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Narrative</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i. Narrative as an approach to research</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. Narrative Inquiry</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii. Narrative therapy</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Alternative Methodologies</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Case study design</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Quality criteria and impact</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter 3: Research procedures

- Overview 35
- Ethical considerations 35
- Participants 36
  i. Selection of participants 36
  ii. Descriptions of participants 37
- Pilot study 38
- Data collection 39
- Analytic strategy 41
- Summary 43

Chapter 4: Analysis

- Overview 44

‘Owen’
- ‘I just found it stupid’ 46
- ‘Does no one care about me?’ 47
- ‘I’ve started to slowly fade away’ 50
- ‘What kinda parent does that?’ 52
- ‘I’m just a smart boy who’s made a stupid mistake’ 55
- ‘This is the school I should belong at’ 56

‘Sarah’
- ‘False promises false hopes’ 59
- ‘I’m totally in the dark’ 63
- ‘I come out shaking to be fair I were mortified’ 67
- ‘He’s got this big thing hanging over him’ 69
- ‘These are the years he should be learning this stuff…and we’ve like stripped that away from him’ 71

‘Miss Williams’
- ‘We always do believe children should have a fresh start’ 76
- ‘We consistently have those high expectations and the support’s always there’ 79
- ‘It was like I’ve got to make up for what I’ve done’ 82
- ‘I think he has got some social emotional issues’ 84
‘The way SWAPP was done in XLocal Authority was one of the worst I’d seen’

Chapter 5: Discussion

Overview
Introduction
The Local Authority: Links to the wider systemic context
The lead up to the ‘swap’
Behaviour as a communication
Owen: A lack of voice
Owen: Shame, isolation and protective factors
Identified good practice.
Power struggles and communication barriers
Reflections on the research process.
Limitations and suggestions for future research

Conclusions
List of tables

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Table 1</td>
<td>Transcription conventions</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Table 2</td>
<td>Colour coding for analytic strategy</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

List of appendices

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Appendices</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Narrative based interview prompts</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Alternative methodologies</td>
<td>124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Ethical approval letter</td>
<td>126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Information and consent sheets</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. Staff information sheet</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. Parent information sheet</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c. Young person information sheet</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d. Staff consent form</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e. Young person consent form</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f. Parent/carer consent form (permission for</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>child to participate)</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g. Parent/carer consent form</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Transcription conventions and pseudonyms</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>used for anonymity</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Pilot study</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. Reflections on pilot study</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. Pilot interview schedule</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Interview schedules and semi-structured</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prompts</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. Parent/child</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b. Staff</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Summary: Recommendations for the Local</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Authority</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Analysed transcripts</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. Owen interview 1 with analysis</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>Maps showing composition of analyses using the Listening Guide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>---------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>a. Owen composition of analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b. Sarah composition of analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>c. Miss Williams composition of analysis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>I poems</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>a. Owen’s I poem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b. Sarah’s I poem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>c. Miss Williams’ I poem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>Example of part of the process to identify key ‘themes’ within Owen's narrative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td>Transcript extracts referenced for Miss Williams</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.</td>
<td>Summary: The EP role in supporting CYP at risk of exclusion</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Introduction and rationale for research**

As I have progressed through my doctoral training, I have developed my passion for being an advocate for those CYP and families often described as being ‘at the margins’ of society. This is underpinned by a strong awareness and commitment to social justice and inclusion. Through my daily practice as a Trainee Educational Psychologist (TEP) I see first-hand how the competing agendas of ‘inclusion’ and ‘attainment’ lead to the marginalization of those CYP and families who do not ‘fit’. I have worked with many CYP whose ‘behaviour’ is seen to be ‘incompatible’ with the school, leading to a risk of ‘exclusion’. My previous role as a teacher means that I am all too aware of the demands placed on schools and their staff. I understand the difficulties that school staff face in this battle for seemingly incompatible agendas. This research is therefore placed within, and has an acute awareness of, this highly complex and multi-faceted educational context.

According to government legislation, fair access protocols must be in place within every Local Authority (LA). This process aims to ensure that ‘unplaced children, especially the most vulnerable, are found and offered a place quickly so that time out of school is kept to a minimum’ (DfE, 2012, p. 3). The code does not prescribe the structure or detailed content of the protocol, but instead ‘allows LA’s, schools and academies the freedom to develop and agree protocols which best serve the needs of the children in the area’ (DfE, 2012, p. 3). It is expected that this is a collaborative process, with schools, CYP and families working together to decide upon the best placement, according to the needs of both the child and the school (DfE, 2012).

Within my local authority, monthly FAP (Fair Access Panel) meetings take place, which is chaired by an impartial member of the local authority. Representatives from schools within the LA (including academies) meet on a monthly basis. This may include head teachers or members of the senior leadership team, SENCOs or inclusion staff. Also present are representatives from the Pupil Referral Unit. The purpose of the FAP is to arrange placement for pupils who have been permanently excluded, or to arrange a ‘school swap’ for pupils considered ‘at risk’ of permanent exclusion. A ‘school swap’ refers to a process whereby a pupil will go on roll at an alternative school, rather than being issued with a permanent exclusion. This process differs to a ‘managed move’ since there is no ‘trial’ period. Families and pupils are not present at the panel, however, they are asked to give a first and second choice school, which is considered at the panel.

In 2017 when I was beginning my research journey, I sat on the FAP panel. This was a very interesting experience and further provided the motivation for my research. I questioned some of the processes that I saw, and I wondered whether the processes were
indeed ‘fair’ for vulnerable children, young people and families. Schools would offer reasons why they couldn’t accept students, such as that they had ‘taken someone last time’, or that they couldn’t meet needs. Hence the school choices provided by families and children were often disregarded. There seemed to be little understanding of the reasons behind often complex behavior, as well as little evidence of assess-plan-do-review processes. Involvement of SENCO and outside agencies was often not apparent.

In September 2017, there was also a review into the quality of the Fair Access Protocols (FAP) and related policies and procedures within the LA. This was carried out by an independent educational consultant and was commissioned by the local authority. The evidence base included referring to the LA FAP policy document, scrutiny of 30 referrals made through the FAP process during the course of the year (2016-2017), discussions with the LA Head of services, discussions with some head teachers and the Principal Educational Psychologist, as well as discussions with the head of the PRU and FAP admin staff. According to this report, ‘The FAP policy and protocols do not reflect fully the statutory guidance contained in the SEND code of practice’ (Local Authority FAP report, September 2017, p. 5). It was found that too few schools ‘provide clear and accessible information about pupil learning, behaviour and emotional wellbeing the form of an agreed and shared inclusion plan’. Too few schools were found to follow the Assess-Plan-Do-Review (APDR) process as in the SEN Code of Practice (DfE, & DoH 2015), and it was found that ‘FAP referrals rarely include evidence of SENCO input and impact’. Furthermore, the review criticised the fact that it is ‘not possible to keep track of pupil’s progress post FAP’ due to current procedures that are in place, and that the ‘views of parents and pupils are not fully considered as part of the FAP process’ (Local Authority FAP report, p. 5). The report specified that:

‘FAP protocols should enable the sharing of ‘fresh start’ successes- what worked and why?’

(Local Authority FAP report, September 2017, p. 17).

Hence, this report further developed my motivation for my research, since there is clearly a need to address many of these factors. When I first embarked on this research journey in 2017, I had originally anticipated that I would examine the process of a ‘managed move’ through the Fair Access Panel. However, once I started to look into the possibility for this within my LA, it came to light that this process no longer existed. I then decided to examine the process of a ‘school swap’ through the Fair Access Panel (as described above).

Through this research thesis I hope to:
• Add to the body of research that attempts to reiterate that we cannot allow this growing issue of educational and social exclusion to become an accepted part of ‘normality’.
• Contribute to the literature in terms of how best to support children, young people and families ‘at risk’ of exclusion.
• Give voice to those who are often silenced, particularly with regards to a ‘school swap’.
• Provide the LA with some recommendations around their Fair Access Protocols.
• Provide information to contribute to an ‘inclusion’ training support package for schools, being developed within the Educational Psychology Service in which I am based.
Chapter 1: Critical Literature Review

Overview

This chapter begins with an outline of school exclusion in the context of the present day. I examine the history of behaviour ‘becoming a problem’, including a consideration of current societal processes which lead to marginalization. A discussion around ‘alternatives’ to exclusion follows, including the use of ‘managed moves’ and the rise of so called ‘grey’ exclusionary practices in schools. I present an examination of current literature with regards to supporting CYP considered to be ‘at risk’ of exclusion. I then discuss limitations and questions that arise from existing research, before presenting a case for research that draws upon a narrative approach.

School exclusion in context

The 1986 Education Act first introduced the term ‘exclusion’, whereby three categories of exclusion from school were referred to, including permanent, fixed-term and indefinite (Maguire, Macrae, & Milbourne, 2003). Whilst the term ‘indefinite’ exclusion is no longer used, both permanent and fixed term exclusion continue to be used within the UK education system (DfE, 2017). According to statutory guidance from the DfE (2017), ‘A pupil may be excluded for one or more fixed periods (up to a maximum of 45 school days in a single academic year, or permanently’ (p. 8). School exclusion has long been associated with negative consequences for children and young people, including a detrimental effect on their academic attainment, separation from their peer group, preventing access to the mainstream curriculum and risks of long term unemployment and poverty (McCluskey, Riddell, Weedon & Fordyce, 2016). Involvement in the criminal justice system (as both victim and offender) is more common for children who are excluded (McAra & McVie, 2010). Exclusion can also have negative financial consequences, since parents may have to leave work to take care for their children (Munn, Lloyd & Cullen, 2000). Those who are excluded are often labelled as being ‘deviant’, which can lead to a self- fulfilling prophecy (Krohn, Lopes & Ward, 2014, as cited by Bagley & Hallam 2016). Negative reputations can result in generations of ‘excluded’ families, (Daniels, 2011) and the experience of exclusion can further reduce the life chances of those already disadvantaged (e.g. Roffey, 2016).

Official records demonstrate that the overall rate of permanent and fixed term exclusions has been increasing in England over the last 10 years (DfE, 2018). The number
of permanent exclusions increased from 6,685 for the 2015-16 academic year, to 7,720 for the 2016-17 academic year. The number of ‘fixed term’ exclusions increased from 339,360 for the 2015-16 academic year to 381,865 for the 2016-17 academic year (DfE, 2018). Exclusion for certain groups of pupils is disproportionately higher than for others, which has been the case for a number of years. According to the DfE (2018), for the academic year 2016-2017, over half of all permanent and fixed term exclusions in England occurred in year 9 or above, with around one quarter being for pupils aged 14. Boys were over three times more likely to receive a permanent or fixed term exclusion than girls, and those pupils known to be eligible for and claiming free school meals (FSM) were around four times more likely to receive a permanent or fixed term exclusion. Pupils of Gypsy/Roma and Travellers of Irish Heritage ethnic groups had the highest rates of both permanent and fixed term exclusions, and ‘Black Caribbean pupils were three times more likely to be permanently excluded than the school population as a whole’ p.6). Pupils with special educational needs (SEN) accounted for almost half of all permanent and fixed term exclusions, and pupils with an Education, Health and Care Plan (EHCP) had exclusion rates over five times higher than those without (DfE, 2018).

The UK has a long history of punitive disciplinary practices, which continue to be a prominent feature in school behavior management strategies (Jull, 2008). Such approaches have deeply entrenched historical roots, linking to ‘societal discourses regarding discipline and punishment for rule-breaking behavior’ (Foucault, 1991, as cited by Jull, 2008, p. 14). Societal norms and discourses which lead to the categorization and exclusion of those individuals considered ‘deviant’ (e.g. MacLure, Jones, Holmes & MacRae, 2012) will be briefly explored in the preceding section of this chapter.

‘Disruptive behavior’: A historical examination.

The complex reasons behind practices which ‘categorise’ individuals can be considered in relation to the Foucauldian notion of ‘genealogies’. According to Ailwood (2004):

‘Genealogies do no searching for foundations or underlying truths… rather, they search for accidents, contingencies, overlapping discourses, threads of power and conditions of possibility for the production of commonsense, taken-for-granted truths’ (p. 21).

A key aspect of genealogical studies which can help us to understand current norms and discourses present within education is that of ‘governmentality’ (Foucault, 2000, cited by Ailwood, 2004). Governmentality is used to describe how schools, prisons and hospitals
become institutions for surveillance by the government (Foucault, 1977). According to Aliwood (2004), Foucauldian notions of governmentality ‘provide a useful entrée into the links and connections, power relations and accidents that form the basis of the regulation and management of young children and their education’ (p. 21). Such factors enable us to understand the ways ‘in which our daily lives are governed and managed’, and also to recognise that there is ‘potential for shifts and changes in this governing’ (Aliwood, 2004, p.30).

During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, large populations came to be categorized as ‘abnormal’ (Billington, 2000). This included the confinement of diseased populations, moving on to the confinement of those deemed unable to contribute to economic expansion. This included the ‘sick’ ‘criminal’ or ‘unemployable’, in institutions such as workhouses, prisons and hospitals. The asylum later came to provide confinement of those who did not conform to 18th century notions of reason (classified as ‘mad’ or ‘insane’) (Billington, 2000). Such practices of confinement are said to be ‘connected to the institutional demands of the government’, whereby those deemed less able to contribute to an expanding economy were singled out and often excluded from society (Billington, 2000, p. 5).

During the second half of the 19th century, the confinement of children followed. This was through legislations in child employment and education, such as the 1870 Education Act (Billington, 2000). This lead to the identification of some children as being not amenable to such training and control, and were therefore removed from the educational arena. The first Educational Psychologist, Cyril Burt, was required to ‘confirm the identity of feeble-minded children alongside those identified as idiots and imbeciles’ (Williams & Goodley, 2017, p. 47). The ‘pathologisation’ of children thus began, whereby physical or mental ‘handicap’ was diagnosed by ‘experts’ (Billington, 2000, Williams & Goodley, 2017). Burman (1996) speaks of the historical role of psychology in governing and shaping our lives, whereby it is ‘used to legitimize actions and interventions’ (p.2) and where it ‘affects, intersections with and (re) constitutes inequalities structured around gender, race, class, age, sexuality and disability’ (p.3). Psychologists are described as ‘gatekeepers’ who ‘police the boundaries between normality and abnormality’ (p. 3).

The early development of psychology thus supported principles of pathology and diagnosis, as well as measuring, categorizing and ranking children (e.g. Billington, 2000, Newton & Wilson, 2011). By the end of the 19th century, schools had developed into institutions whereby ‘governmentality’ and ‘social training’ took precedence over learning (Billington, 2000). Rose (1999) further states that ‘childhood is the most intensely governed
sector of personal existence’ (p. 123). Such a view indicates that childhood is a time of intervention, whereby ‘agents of change for the future’ are created (Aliwoond, 2004).

**Behaviour: Becoming a problem**

This historical context therefore allows us to understand the processes and systems that maintain such processes of categorization and social exclusion within our current educational system. According to Bowman-Perrott et al. (2013), children with SEN most likely to be excluded are those with attention deficit or hyperactivity, or emotional and behavioural difficulties. According to the DfE (2018) ‘persistent disruptive behavior’ is the most common reason cited by schools for both permanent and fixed term exclusions in state-funded primary, secondary and special schools (p.5). According to McCluskey et al. (2016) ‘Children with special needs and others facing multiple disadvantage continue to experience both official and hidden exclusion from school at disproportionately high levels.’

Hence, although the concept of inclusion has underpinned educational policies in the UK for a number of years (e.g. Vincent, Harris, Thomson & Toalster, 2007), there are processes at work which contradict this goal (e.g. Clarke & Venables, 2004). For example, current government legislations and policy emphasise a number of factors which could be said to be incompatible (e.g. Rothi, Leavey & Best, 2008). These include the inclusion of those children identified as having SEN in mainstream schools, an emphasis on raising educational standards, as well as a strive for a reduction in exclusion figures (Clarke & Venables, 2004). A tension is therefore present between inclusion on one hand, and academic targets and standards on the other (Rothi, Leavey & Best, 2008).

School staff often then find themselves with a huge diversity of ability in the classroom, including those children whose behaviour may present as extremely challenging (Roffey 2016). The demands for inspection and testing has led to a situation where there is less room for flexibility in teaching to encompass the needs of all children (Baroutsis, McGregor & Mills, 2015). Behavioural frameworks are often in place in school whereby sanctions and rewards aim to reduce socially undesirable behaviours (Gilling, 2016). The need to balance the rights of those pupils seen to engage in disruptive behaviour, against the rights of classmates to an education free from disruption, is often used in order to justify fixed term or permanent exclusion (Vincent et al., 2007). In this way, school systems emphasise the management of disruptive behaviour, rather than examining the systemic factors which may be causing the underlying emotional or psychological distress (Bowers, 1996)
MacLure, Jones, Holmes and MacRae (2012) examine the factors which lead to CYP being seen as a ‘problem’. Current UK policy frames behavioral difficulties in terms of ‘Social, Emotional and Mental Health’ (SEMH) (SEN Code of Practice, DfE & DoH, 2015), replacing the previous category of ‘Social, Emotional and Behavioural Difficulties’ (SEBD). Poor impulse control, difficulties with motivation and concentration, difficulties with cooperation, low empathy, self-esteem issues and ‘emotional literacy’ difficulties have all been associated with ‘problem behaviour (MacLure et al., 2012). Wider societal and educational discourses, as well as the culture of the classroom are said to lead to this ‘labelling’ process (e.g. MacLure et al., 2012). It is proposed that behavior is framed by shifting theoretical and professional discourses (Visser, 2003 as cited by MacLure et al., 2012). Britzman (2000) describes the nature of discourses:

‘Discourses authorize what can and cannot be said; they produce relations of power and communities of consent and dissent, and thus discursive boundaries are always being redrawn around what constitutes the desirable and the undesirable, and around what it is that makes possible particular structures of intelligibility and unintelligibility.’ (p. 36).

Current prevailing discourses of ‘normal development’, which are engrained within the UK curriculum and informed by developmental psychology, lead to some children being pathologised, since such discourses privilege a particular model of ‘normality’ (Walkerdine, 2000). Further ‘framing devices’ which lead to children being seen as a ‘problem’ include their family situation and community background, such as ‘narratives of the neglectful, uncooperative, anxious or interfering parent’ (MacLure et al., 2012, p. 37). As a result, some children arrive in school with ‘problem’ reputations already partially formed. According to Walkerdine (2000) ‘Such a child is not discovered but produced in regimes of truth created in those very practices which proclaim the child in all naturalness’ (p. 13).

Such discourses are used to justify the act of social exclusion, when children are seen to be a ‘poor fit’ with school rules, culture, climate and expectations (Vincent et al., 2007). Billington (2000) speaks of pathologisation, leading to stigma, as well as unnecessary and unhelpful labels being attached to children. This process often attaches blame with the individual child or family rather than with the systems surrounding them. Schools are then left with ‘a diminished set of tools with which to address problems’ (Billington, 2000, p. 7). As well as formal ‘exclusion’, this process may also involve children being labelled as a ‘problem’ within their school environment, which in itself could be similarly damaging (MacLure et al., 2012). As stated by Billington and Pomerantz (2004) there are many forms of social marginalization, exclusion and discrimination, and there is a need to ‘challenge theories and practices which serve to marginalise’ (p. 4).
Exclusion: A social injustice

There is no evidence to suggest that exclusion from school improves outcomes for those CYP who experience it (e.g. Billington, 2000). Parsons (2005) speaks of the fact that educational policies are often more about ‘confronting and diverting the unwanted behaviour and not, for the most part, about meeting unmet needs’ (p. 17). Jull (2008) highlights:

‘Surely it is time to re-evaluate the repertoire of responses considered appropriate in the provision…..because an increased risk for punitive disciplinary action is not what I describe as an inclusive approach….forcible removal and confinement of a child for non-compliance remains an indication of failure on the part of a school and the educational system to resolve problems linked to behaviour’ (p. 14).

Roffey (2016) speaks of the fact that children who present with challenging behaviours are often living with chronic adversity and stress, such as poverty, abuse, neglect, loss and violence. It is widely recognized that children and young people who live or who have lived with violence in the home are at risk of multiple developmental problems, which may then lead to the presentation of challenging behaviour (e.g. Roffey, 2016). The Home Office (2018) offers the following definition of domestic violence:

‘any incident or pattern of incidents of controlling, coercive or threatening behavior, violence or abuse between those aged 16 or over, who are or have been intimate partners or family members….It can include but is not limited to psychological, physical, sexual, financial and emotional abuse.’ (p. 6).

Research also shows that the vast majority of domestic violence (DV) is perpetrated by men against women and their children (The Home Office, 2018). According to Ellis (2018) ‘domestic abuse is a complex and pervasive issue that dominates millions of women and children’s lives worldwide’ (p. 424). Stanley (2011) highlights that domestic violence can have a destructive effect of children’s lives both at home and in school. Exposure to domestic violence can have a severe impact on the psychological wellbeing, as well as on behavioral, social and cognitive development (Dodd, 2009). Alongside this, research reports profound effects of the experience of DV and abuse on mothers, including long lasting impacts on physical and mental health and wellbeing (Dodd, 2009). This can then affect their ability to work, support themselves, maintain their self-confidence and parent their children (Dodd, 2009; Cort & Rowley, 2015). The importance of Bowlby’s Attachment Theory in parent and child relationships is widely recognised, whereby sensitive and responsive caregiving leads to emotional and social development in children (Dodd, 2009). Dodd (2009) highlights that ‘many factors can adversely affect the parent-child attachment
relationship, including family dysfunction and domestic violence’ (p. 25). Hence where mothers are depressed, distracted and emotionally drained they may be less emotionally available to their children (Holden & Ritchie, 1991).

Due to these factors, research has shown that children exposed to DV are more likely to have emotional and behavioural problems (e.g. Humphreys, 2006). They are also more likely to exhibit more aggressive behavior and are more likely to be involved in fights and bullying (e.g. Baldry, 2003). The ability to feel empathy towards others may be lost (Holt, Buckley & Whelan, 2008). Such adverse life conditions can cause CYP to feel angry, anxious, despairing, depressed and/or confused (Roffey, 2016). Hence, such challenging behavior in the school environment can further lead to the use of discipline and sanctions, including exclusion from school (e.g. Roffey, 2016). Roffey (2016) speaks of the ‘double whammy’ effect, whereby children who experience adverse experiences in the family home are then further rejected by the school system (Roffey, 2016).

An alternative to exclusion?

Whilst rates of permanent and fixed term exclusion in Wales and Scotland appear to be falling, (Power and Taylor, 2018) in 2017, it was estimated that the rate of exclusions in England had increased by 40% since 2014, with an average of 35 children per day being excluded (Weale and Duncan, 2017). England therefore has the highest rates of both fixed- term and permanent exclusions in the UK (Power & Taylor, 2018). It is suggested that this is due to the particular negative consequences of ‘marketisation’ education policies in England, whereby those children who negatively affect the school’s performance data are more likely to be excluded (e.g. Messeter & Soni, 2018). The rise in ‘Academies’ in England is also thought to lead to increased rates of exclusion, since they do not come under the same monitoring and scrutiny of the LA. Higher rates of exclusion within academies is thought to be due to their pressing need to ‘produce favourable academic results to attract funding to open new schools within an academy trust’ (Messeter & Soni, 2018 p. 170).

However, it is argued that these UK wide figures may be misleading, due to the increasing use of ‘grey’ ‘hidden’ ‘unofficial or ‘informal’ forms of exclusion (Power & Taylor, 2018). Gazeley, Marrable, Brown and Boddy (2015) describe exclusion figures as ‘the tip of the iceberg’ whereby ‘further contextualization’ is required (p.500). It is suggested that these practices may be used so as to ‘mask’ real exclusion figures, since schools are increasingly under pressure to reduce rates of exclusion (Messeter & Soni, 2018). ‘Grey’ exclusions are said to include various practices, including the use of part-time timetables,
internal ‘inclusion’ units, sending a pupil home to ‘cool off’ without recording it, indicating that they are being ‘educated off site’ amongst others (McCluskey et al., 2016, Power & Taylor, 2018). Official guidance from the DfE (2017) states:

‘Informal’ or ‘unofficial’ exclusions, such as sending a pupil home ‘to cool off’, are unlawful, regardless of whether they occur with the agreement of parents or carers. Any exclusion of a pupil, even for short periods of time, must be formally recorded.’ (p.10)

Excluding children from school has been said to violate the rights of CYP under the European Convention on Human Rights (2010) as well as the United Nations Convention on the Rights of the Child (1989) (Bagley & Hallam, 2016). Recognition of the negative consequences of exclusion over time has led to various alternatives. One such alternative to exclusion is what is currently known as a ‘managed move’, which was introduced by the Labour government in 2004 (Messeter & Soni, 2018). Through this process, schools are encouraged to work in partnership to try a ‘managed move’ before excluding a pupil (DfE, 2017). The pupil is ‘moved’ in a strategic manner, with the key difference to exclusion being that it is a voluntary agreement between all parties. It emphasises a carefully designed transition, which is facilitated by an impartial professional. Young people and parents are fully involved throughout (Department for Education and Skills (DfES), 2004). This process does not have to be used by schools, and there are no set standards in order to hold schools to account (Centre for Social Justice, 2011). It is suggested that when governed appropriately, managed moves can provide a positive option. However, since the process is not monitored it could be open to exploitation (Messeter & Soni, 2018). According to official government legislation:

‘Maintained schools have the power to direct a pupil off-site for education to improve their behaviour. A pupil at any type of school can also transfer to another school as part of a ‘managed move’ where this occurs with the consent of the parties involved, including the parents and the admission authority of the school. However, the threat of exclusion must never be used to influence parents to remove their child from the school.’ (DfE, 2017, p. 10).

Fair Access Protocols (as discussed previously) apply here.

Research on managed moves is relevant to the process of a ‘school swap’ in the present paper, since it represents the chance for CYP to have a ‘fresh start’ in a new school, rather than having a permanent exclusion on their ‘record’ (Messeter & Soni, 2018). Literature with regards to the effectiveness of managed moves is limited. Bagley and Hallam (2015) and Bagley and Hallam (2016) interviewed professionals, CYP and
parents followed by thematic analysis, in order to examine factors contributing to success, as well as the nature of challenges. It was proposed that ‘*when implemented successfully, managed moves can be a positive, life changing event for young people*’ (Bagley & Hallam, 2016, p. 223). Positive factors include CYP having a ‘fresh start’, being able to ‘reinvent themselves’ and having a ‘second chance’ (Bagley and Hallam, 2015, Bagley & Hallam, 2016). Home school partnerships, early intervention, transition support, positive language and attitude from staff, relationships with staff and peers and involving the young person were all considered important (Bagley & Hallam 2015, Bagley & Hallam 2016, Flitcroft & Kelly 2016). Harris, Vincent, Thomson and Toalster (2006) as well as Vincent et al. (2007) concluded that it was not the process of managed transfers themselves which led to positive outcomes, but rather the schools’ inclusive ethos, including tailored support, care and commitment. These factors led to a decrease in ‘problematic’ behaviours, fewer exclusions and better academic attainment, as well as students developing a more positive view of themselves.

However, challenges reported in the literature include the fact that schools may have diverse agendas in instigating the process of a managed move, and the needs of CYP may not be at the forefront (e.g. Bagley & Hallam, 2016). Further difficulties highlighted in research include schools seeing CYP as a ‘problem’ to be passed around and the process being stressful for CYP and families (Bagley and Hallam 2015, Bagley & Hallam 2016.) It is proposed that the UK education system, with its focus on academic results, ‘*punishes the victims of a system that fails to cater for them*’ and that ‘*managed moves could become part of this trend*’ (Bagley and Hallam 2015, p. 443).

**Supporting CYP at risk of exclusion**

Messeter and Soni (2018) speak of the ‘*range of alternatives for CYP at risk of exclusion*’ (p. 170). These may include ‘*support from external agencies*’, as well as ‘*evidence-based interventions*’ such as ‘*anger management*’ and ‘*restorative justice*’ (e.g. Morrison, 2006 as cited by Messeter & Soni, p. 170). Staff may be offered support on behavior management techniques (e.g. Pane et al., 2014). Systemic-level interventions, such as multi-systemic therapy can help to support both the school and the family, however this can be costly (Fox and Ashmore, 2015)

Roffey (2016) speaks of a whole school ethos that is needed to support vulnerable students. It is highlighted that ‘*approaches to behaviour focused primarily on following rules may be effective for many children but may exacerbate difficulties for others, leading to a downward spiral*’ (Roffey, 2016., p. 38). Instead, it is suggested that the school
environment should focus on promoting protective factors, including resilience. Eames, Shippen and Sharp (2016) speak of resilience as the capacity to ‘bounce back’ in the face of adversity, promoting emotional wellbeing. According to Doll (2013) resilience is a ‘characteristic that emerges out of the systemic interdependence of children with their families, communities and schools’ (p. 400).

Protective factors are said to include building supportive relationships, high expectations, clear and consistent boundaries, working collaboratively with families, teaching social and emotional skills and problem solving, giving pupils agency and opportunities to contribute. These are said to be invaluable in building wellbeing, resilience and a positive climate for learning (Roffey, 2016). However, such problems present in the lives of some CYP and families are not simple or easily resolved. Kearney, Williams and Doherty (2016) recognise that these are complex problems, which require complex solutions and a long term approach, in order to break cycles of poor outcomes in the lives of individuals and families.

Vostanis et al (2013) speak of the fact that schools often fail to work on evidence based approaches for SEMH difficulties, often expressed as behavioural difficulties (Roffey, 2016). Staff training and supervision is often low priority, as well as support and awareness raising for parents. Practices were found to be reactive rather than preventative, with a focus on within-child difficulties (Vostanis et al., 2013).

Questions and limitations

i. A fresh start?

There are several consistent themes within the research presented above. For example, the idea that CYP needed a ‘fresh start’ runs throughout. As stated by Bagley and Hallam (2015) ‘It was consistently acknowledged that young people needed an opportunity to reinvent themselves and receive a second chance…managed moves needed to take place whilst a young person was able to re-assess their behaviour and make a fresh start’. Vincent et al. (2007) also speak of children being ‘disaffected’ and as having ‘problem behaviour’. Such statements suggest that the problem is located within the individual child, and appear to ignore the ‘failure on the part of the school and educational system’ to provide an inclusive and supportive environment in the first place (e.g. Jull, 2008, p. 14). This ‘within-child deficit’ model is strengthened in the official DfE (2017) guidance regarding managed moves, which emphasises that the process will help CYP to ‘improve their behaviour’ (p.10). Frankham and Kerr (2009) speak of the fact that in order
to give CYP a more ‘open’ future, work with CYP must take the past into account whilst not letting it prescribe the future, which questions such notions of a ‘fresh start’.

ii. The views of CYP and families

The engagement of CYP and parents in matters that involve them is highlighted by the SEN Code of practice (DfE & DoH, 2015), which then impacts positively on motivation and individual development (Quinn & Owen, 2014.) Greig, Hobbs and Roffey (2014) speak of the problematic nature of seeking CYP views, which needs to go beyond ‘tokenistic’ gestures. The importance of this is emphasised for those CYP viewed as more ‘vulnerable’ and who may not conform to behavioural expectations, often leading to the marginalisation of their views (Greig, Hobbs & Roffey, 2014). There is currently limited research examining the views of CYP at risk of permanent exclusion and what is important to them within school. According to Gilling (2016) ‘Rarely do these interventions focus on the possibility for consulting young people about their lives, about what does and does not concern them and the position they take on this’ (p. 92). Cooper (2006) speaks of the fact that this group of young people are the ‘least empowered and liked group of all’ (Cooper, 2006, p.39). According to Tellis-James and Fox (2016) most research requires participants to look back on their school experiences. Rather, the authors suggest that the focus should be on allowing the young person to shift focus from the past to the future, enabling them to ‘look at their identity through a different lens, no longer seeing himself as a victim of unfortunate circumstances’ (Spiteri, 2009, p. 245 as cited by Tellis-James & Fox, 2016 p. 328).

The active participation of CYP in decision making has been associated with many benefits, including enhanced motivation and academic achievement (Baroutsis, McGregor & Mills, 2016). However Rudduck and Fielding (2006) highlight that the voice of CYP is often not genuinely sought since this may challenge current educational practices. This is emphasised further by Fielding (2004) who speaks of the fact that ‘voice’ may be used manipulatively, where it is sought to agree with rather than challenge current practices. This could be said to be the case in ‘managed move’ research presented above, whereby evidence of ‘success’ is sought (e.g. Bagley & Hallam, 2016, Vincent et al., 2007).

Frankham and Kerr (2009) further emphasise that educational research is often focussed on producing ‘conclusive demonstrations’ and ‘neat solutions’ with regards to what will improve the teaching and learning environment (Frankham and Kerr, 2009 p. 419). Rather, the authors argue that the educational context is not amenable to a ‘quick fix’. Furthermore, as could be said of the studies presented above, Frankham and Kerr (2009) criticise the fact that research often labels and categorises participants, implying
that they have fixed attitudes and aspirations which are context neutral. Frankham and Kerr (2009) call for research that ‘works in ways which are not about satisfying our own desires for explanations, justifications and ‘closure’’ (p. 419).

Since parents play a vital role within the development, learning, emotional care and adjustment of their children, working with parents is viewed as central to good practice (Dunsmuir, Cole & Wolfe, 2014). Hence, there is an increasing number of government initiatives aimed at increasing parental participation regarding their children’s SEN needs, including parenting programs (e.g. Trotter & Rafferty, 2014). Literature highlights the importance of ‘partnership’ between parents and professionals, which is said to bring about improved outcomes for CYP with SEMH needs (e.g. McQueen & Hobbs, 2014). However, McQueen and Hobbs (2014) highlight that this strive for ‘partnership’ and ‘collaboration’ is flawed, since parents are often viewed as needing ‘upskilling’ due to a perceived lack of knowledge and information. Furthermore, parents are often blamed, and viewed as failing to take responsibility for CYP development and wellbeing, with their parenting practices being viewed as inadequate (Broomhead, 2013). Alley et al. (2014) highlight that the parents of children with SEMH needs are often experiencing a variety of personal and interpersonal difficulties themselves. This may include mental health needs, as well as financial and emotional problems. Hence, such factors may then mean that parents are not always available to their children, in order to support their social and emotional development (e.g. Alley et al., 2014).

Despite the voice of parents and carers being central in the SEN Code of Practice, in practice they are often marginalised, and ‘tokenistic’ involvement is more common (e.g. Gazeley, 2012). Day (2013) further notes that there is an absence of the direct views of parents, including the views of parents whose children have SEMH needs or whose children are at risk of exclusion from school. Research often suggests that parents and carers can find the systems surrounding exclusion and ‘Fair Access’ protocols confusing. It is proposed that schools can often use the threat of a permanent exclusion as a way to enforce ‘grey’ exclusion, which is made far easier when parents are unaware of their rights (e.g. McCluskey et al., 2016). However, Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015) highlight that research tends to focus on the perspective of schools, in terms of how they engage with and involve parents, rather than directly asking parents themselves about this experience. This is therefore a gap I hope to contribute towards.

Frankham and Kerr (2009) speak of the problem in assuming that ‘truths’ are generated in research, which could be said to be the case in the research presented above. For example, the research discussed tends to ‘imply an unproblematic relationship
between words and meaning’ (Frankham & Kerr, 2009 p. 417). The authors speak of the fact that research often assumes that ‘truths’ can be uncovered and ‘realities’ can be accessed, which is problematic since there are in fact versions of reality (Frankham & Kerr, 2009). Mazzei (2003) states:

‘We as researchers need to be carefully attentive to what is not spoken, not discussed, not answered, for in those absences is where the very fat and rich information is yet to be known and understood. This fat material requires our listening differently and to begin recognising the richness in our own and others’ silences’ (p.358).

iii. ‘Unofficial’ ‘hidden’ and grey exclusion?

Whilst research into what may be deemed ‘official’ alternatives to permanent exclusion (such as managed moves) are slowly emerging, what is clearly lacking in the research is an examination of other, ‘non-official’ or what could be deemed ‘grey’ alternatives to exclusion that are increasingly on the rise (e.g. Power & Taylor, 2018). I would propose that the process of a ‘school swap’ examined by this paper is one such example of this. Power and Taylor (2018) speak of the fact that perhaps anything to avoid the damaging consequences of permanent exclusion is worthwhile. However, ‘this needs to be demonstrated rather than asserted’ (p.9). Power and Taylor (2018) further state:

‘without wishing to deny the damaging consequences of official exclusion from school… the other forms of exclusion may also carry negative consequences…until the effects of these other forms of exclusion are known- at individual, institutional and system level- we should not assume that a school or system is necessarily any more or less ‘inclusive’ on the basis of official data on school exclusions’. (p. 1). In addition:

‘There is recognition that schools have developed other approaches to dealing with troubled and troublesome students that fall short of what counts as an official exclusion but which are nonetheless, exclusionary.’ (p.4).

Jull (2008) also speaks of the fact that such processes can

‘have the same damaging impact as permanent exclusions as they can...exacerbate negative socio-behavioural developmental patterns, compound identified risk factors and associated deleterious social emotional and cognitive/ learning outcomes’ (Jull, 2008, p13)

Summary
The rise in exclusion figures has resulted in various alternatives, of which there is little research. It is therefore unclear as to how CYP, families and schools make sense of such alternatives, and what the resulting impacts and outcomes are.

One such alternative to permanent exclusion is the use of a ‘school swap’ through the ‘fair access panel’ within my local authority. These are used often, and there is little known about the impacts for both CYP, parents and schools. This case study will seek to gather a rich picture from multiple perspectives. It will allow for an understanding of the context of the swap, including before, during and after.

The research will offer insight into the Fair Access Protocols that are in place in the LA, so that recommendations can be made as to how these can best support CYP, schools and families.

There is a need to challenge current practices with regards to ‘moving’ CYP due to ‘unacceptable differences’ (e.g. Billington, 2000). Existing papers could be described as ‘opportunistic’ which seek to maintain current practices. It is intended that this research will contribute to literature in terms of how best to support CYP who are ‘at risk’ of exclusion, so that such practices can be reduced.

**Research Questions**

1. How do young people make sense of their experience of a school swap as an alternative to permanent exclusion?
2. How do parents make sense of their child’s involvement in a school swap as an alternative to permanent exclusion?
3. How do key staff make sense of their involvement with children and young people who have gone through a school ‘swap’ as an alternative to permanent exclusion?
4. What can we learn from these stories in order to support children and young people who are at risk of exclusion?

**Reflection**

These research questions were developed through reflection with my research supervisor. In addition to them being appropriate in order to answer questions generated through the literature review, we discussed the fact that the questions were open and would not prescribe any pre-determined ‘theory’ onto data gathered. In this way, it was felt that the questions would allow for a ‘bottom up’ approach to research in the fullest sense.
Chapter 2: Methodology

Overview

This chapter will critically explore my overall choices in methodology. The chapter will begin with a reflection on my ontological and epistemological positioning, and how this has led to my chosen narrative methodology within qualitative research. I will reflect on some alternative methodologies, as well as reflecting on my chosen case study design. The chapter will end with a critical discussion around quality criteria for the research, as well as links with proposed impact and importance.

Positioning

According to Willig (2008) ‘Epistemology’ is a ‘branch of philosophy concerned with the theory of knowledge’. It attempts to answer the question ‘How can we know?’ (p.2). ‘Ontology’ is concerned with the nature of the world and asks ‘what is there to know?’ (p.13). It is proposed that research methods need to be chosen after we have decided upon an epistemological position, since the question ‘what kinds of things it is possible to find out?’ (p.2) influences our methodological choices. Epistemological positions are said to form a continuum, from ‘naïve realism’ (in line with positivism) along to ‘extreme relativism’. ‘Positivism’ or ‘realism’ would suggest that there is a ‘clear relationship between the world and our perception or understanding of it’, and that we are able to describe what is ‘out there’ (Willig, 2008, p.2). Burman (1996) speaks of traditional positivist approaches within psychology, which ‘treat people as subjects to be manipulated and to be theorized about in terms of scientific laws and effect (p. 5)’. ‘New paradigms’ then began to emerge in the 1970’s, which ‘criticised mechanistic models which ignored human agency and meaning making activities’ (p. 6).

‘Relativism’ rejects the idea of pure ‘truth’ and ‘knowledge’. Instead, ‘cultural and discursive resources are used in order to construct different versions of an experience within different contexts’ (Willig, 2008, p. 12). Likewise, ontological positions also fall along this continuum. Whilst a ‘realist’ ontology would suggest that the world is ‘made up of structures and objects that have cause-effect relationships’, a ‘relativist’ ontology proposes that the world is ‘not the orderly, law-bound place that realists believe’. It ‘questions the “out-there-ness” of the world and emphasises the diversity of interpretations that can be applied to it’ (Willig, 2008, p. 13). There are various positions ‘in between’ including ‘critical realism’ and various versions of ‘social constructionism’ (Parker, 1998).
For the purposes of this research journey, my own epistemological positioning falls somewhere in this ‘in between’, drawing on social constructionism, with critical realism and ‘feminist’ underpinnings. I will now discuss these positions in relation to my own research in more detail.

**Social Constructionism, Critical Realism, and Feminist positioning.**

Burr (1995) speaks of the defining features of the ‘social constructionist’ perspective. First is a *critical stance towards taken for granted knowledge* whereby we are cautioned to be critical of our ‘assumptions about how the world appears to be’ (p. 3). Furthermore, our perceptions of ‘truth’, which vary both cross-culturally and historically, are not a direct objective understanding of the world. Rather, our understanding of the world is a product of social processes and interactions. Social constructionism is said to have a liberatory stance, whereby it is possible to reconstruct our understandings and advocate for those marginalised in society (Burr, 1998). This perspective is relevant to my study since it offers some hope with regards to the current situation for vulnerable CYP and families. I take the view that there are current discourses within society that lead to the marginalisation of CYP and families who do not ‘fit’. According to Foucault, (1972), as cited by Gilling (2016), *‘realities are created through discourses which are a set of meanings, images or stories that form a particular version of events’* (p.81).

Burman (1996) speaks of problems arising with social constructionism, since it presents ‘each ‘story’ as equally viable and each position as unconstrained…it denies or underestimates how power relations inform and produce the stories on offer’ (p. 8). If an ‘extreme relativistic’ stance is taken, this can be problematic in advocating for change. As Burr (1998) states ‘how can we say certain groups are oppressed if these ‘groups’ and their ‘oppression’ are constructs which can have no greater claim to any other?’ (p.14).

‘Critical realism’ is a position which goes some way in resolving such issues, and one which fits with my epistemological perspective for this research. Critical realism within a social constructionist perspective is *‘historically and linguistically reflexive, and is also capable of guiding active intervention in ideological and material struggles’* (Willig, 1998, p. 92). Critical realism *‘both assumes an objective reality and recognises that this reality is socially constructed and may be subject to error’* (Pawson & Tilley, 1997, cited by Hardy & Majors, 2017).

Hence, my own positionality can be described as one that recognises the social construction of reality but also recognises the role of power structures within society which
act as marginalising forces. A feminist epistemology can offer some further insight here. Vendramin (2012) highlights that ‘Feminist inquiry deals with hierarchical models of the creation and distribution of knowledge and takes a critical view on traditional (scientific) statements which are usually accepted as ‘universal truth’’ (p.87). Townley (2006) highlights the importance of taking seriously matters of

‘social position, race, gender, sexuality and the like, because social hierarchies can both limit the spheres of action available to agents from non-privileged groups and discourage those from privileged groups from being accountable for their actions when they seek and claim knowledge’ (p. 39-40)

Feminist research requires reflexivity and a critical stance in recognising our positions and the situated nature of knowledge (Lunt, 1998) which I intend to do throughout this paper.

Hence, for myself as a critical realist and feminist researcher, my aim is to provide a space where marginalised voices can be heard, providing opportunity for those ‘existing constructions’ to be ‘destabilised.’ (Lunt, 1998, p. 4). My research recognises that power structures are real which leads to oppression. For example, schools have the power to exclude and vulnerable CYP and families are marginalised as a result. Furthermore, government agendas act as powers which affect the ways in which ‘education’ is understood and carried out.

Burman (1996) speaks of the importance of identifying and reflecting on current discourses which marginalise, so that change can occur. Billington (2006) highlights that the following questions should be considered so that dominant discourses regarding ‘childhood’ can be challenged:

- ‘How do we speak of children?’
- How do we speak with children?
- How do we write of children?
- How do we listen to children?’

(p. 8).

This is particularly important since there is an ‘ever increasing scrutiny of young people’, whereby they are ‘spoken of as if they were members of some kind of alien race’ who are often ‘in need of adult instruction, control or even punishment’ (Billington, 2006, p. 2-3).

Due to my epistemological positioning, a ‘qualitative’ rather than a ‘quantitative’ approach to this research journey research is appropriate. Qualitative research assumes
that there are multiple realities, rather than a single, objective reality. The world is seen as a subjective phenomenon that needs to be interpreted rather than measured, as would be the case in quantitative research (Merriam, 1988). I would argue that quantitative approaches taking a more ‘positivist’ epistemology contribute to a reductionist view of human experience and knowledge, which can assume ‘linear causality’ (Lunt, 1998 p. 4). I am interested in how participants make sense of the world (their experience of the school swap). This is from an **idiographic** perspective, which begins with the individual before moving on to any ‘cautious engagement with theory development or generalisation’ (Willig, 2008 p. 88). Furthermore, qualitative methodologies recognise that the acquisition of knowledge is constrained and mediated by our own culture, perspectives, language and purposes (Camic, Rhodes & Yardley, 2003) more so than in quantitative approaches (Watts, 2014).

**Narrative**

i. **Narrative as an approach to research**

Narrative methodologies in research have become significant within the social sciences (Lieblich, Tval-Mashiach and Zilber, 1998). ‘Narrative research’ is described as ‘any study that uses or analyses narrative materials’ whereby data is collected as a ‘story’ either through interview, field notes or other means (Lieblich et al. 1998, p.3). Bruner (1991) describes a narrative as ‘an account of events occurring over time’ (p 5). Narrative as an approach to research fits with my epistemological position within social constructionism. As cited by Bruner (1991), ‘Our experience of human affairs comes to take the form of the narratives we use in telling about them…Narrative as a form not only of representing but also construing reality’ (p. 5). Furthermore, he states ‘we organize our experience and our memory of human happenings mainly in the form of narrative- stories, excuses, myths, reasons for doing and not doing and so on. Narratives are a version of reality’ (p.4). Hiles and Cermak (2008) further state:

‘Narrative is fundamental to our understanding of the human mind…it dominates human discourse…it is foundational to the processes that organize and structure human experience and action’ (p.150).

A narrative approach to research fits with my intentions as a researcher in raising marginalised voices, in an attempt for recognition and a change in oppressive practices. For example, narrative is said to be a ‘viable instrument for cultural negotiation’ whereby an interplay of perspectives arrives at ‘narrative truth’ (Burner, 1991, p.17). Further, a
collection of narratives have the power to create ‘culture’, ‘history’ or ‘tradition’ (Bruner, 1991 p. 17-18). As is cited by Gilling (2016):

‘Individuals know or discover themselves, as well as reveal themselves, in the stories they tell…the realities we construct are maintained through narratives’ (p.92)….‘If we accept that alternative versions of events are potentially available through language, there may be a variety of different discourses representing the event. Narrative approaches explore the interaction between commonly accepted, so-called objective knowledge, and individual subjective knowledge to understand what interpretation and meaning people construct’ (p. 82).

Seeking authentic individual narratives allows for a bridge to be built between professional knowledge and lived experience (Billington, 2006). This is important since ‘services and practices have been created and sustained according to professional and governmental demands, rather than by using any sensitive analysis of the effects of our actions on the individual’ (Billington, 2006, p. 11). Narrative is said to be ‘emancipatory’ in allowing individuals to ‘experiment with finding other voices’ leading to ‘a voice of (their) own choice’ (Billington, 2006, p. 83).

ii. ii. Narrative Inquiry

Narrative inquiry is concerned with the reconstruction of a person’s experience (Clandinin & Connelly, 2000). It is concerned with the relationship between the researcher and the researched, the use of words rather than numbers as data, as well as there being a focus on the stories being told and the humans that tell them: ‘For narrative inquirers both the stories and the humans are continuously visible in the study’ (Pinnegar & Daynes, 2007, p. 7). For myself it is essential to recognise this element of ‘reconstruction’ since ‘we assimilate narrative on our own terms…we inevitably take the teller’s intentions into account and do so in terms of our background knowledge’ (Bruner, 1991, p. 17). As a result I will include reflections on my own interpretation of meaning throughout. I recognise that there are many alternative and often conflicting interpretations of narratives, and I do not claim that my interpretation is the only reading (e.g. Frosh, 2007). However, through this approach I hope to ‘make a conscious effort to avoid super-imposing yet another adult-preferred account’ on participant stories (Billington, 2006, p. 138). Morgan (2000) proposes that certain practices are recommended to fulfil this goal, such as ‘maintaining a stance of curiosity’ and ‘asking genuine questions to which we do not know the answer’ (p. 138)
Further, the narrative researcher has a responsibility to be a ‘good listener’ whereby the interviewee is a ‘story teller rather than a respondent’ (Holloway & Jefferson, 2000).

iii. Narrative Therapy

Although my research methods were not intended to be ‘therapeutic’, my narrative approach to research draws on some of the principles of ‘narrative therapy’. White and Epston (1990) speak of narrative therapy as promoting ‘those kinds of stories that have healing potential’ where the lives and experiences of individuals who present with problems are ‘storied’ or ‘re-storied’ (p. ix-x). Emphasising the role of narrative in the human experience, it is stated that ‘stories can be liabilities as well as assets’, where some stories ‘promote competence and wellness’ and others serve to ‘constrain, trivialize, disqualify or pathologise ourselves and our relationships’ (p. x). Narrative therapy involves ‘externalising’ the problem so that it becomes ‘less fixed and less restricting’ (White & Epston, 1990, p. 38). My interview prompts were based on those of ‘narrative therapy’ in order to thicken stories and develop rapport with participants (e.g. McQueen & Hobbs, 2014) (see appendix 1 for a list of narrative based prompts). Further detail and reflection on the interview schedules will be discussed in the next chapter.

Reflection

I reflected with my research supervisor that whilst the interviews were not ‘therapy’, I hoped that the experience would allow participants to make sense of their experiences, and to feel heard.

Alternative Methodologies

As stated above, a narrative methodology appealed to me due to its power in providing hope for individuals, and in being an ‘instrument of liberty’ (White & Epston, 1990, p. 217). My interest in narrative began following sessions at university regarding narrative approaches to research, as well as sessions on narrative based therapy. Due to my epistemological and ontological positioning, alongside my research supervisor it was agreed that adopting a narrative methodology was a good fit for the purposes of my research. There are several other methodologies that I encountered on this research
journey which could potentially have been used. These are discussed in appendix 2, alongside reasons why they were not chosen.

Case study design

This research adopts a case study design whereby the ‘case’ is the occurrence of the ‘school swap’, as experienced by a student, parent and staff member. Merriam (1988) describes a case study as ‘an intensive, holistic description and analysis of a bounded phenomenon such as a program, institution, person, process, situation or incident’ (p. xiv). Case study design contains rich descriptions which can be used to support, challenge or illustrate theoretical assumptions. The understanding generated through a case study can change or improve educational practices as well as inform policy (Merriam, 1998). The case study employed in this research project involves triangulation, whereby stories from the student, parent and staff member aim to generate an in-depth understanding of the ‘school swap’ experience from various dimensions (e.g. Willig, 2008). In terms of generalisability, a case study is ‘capable of a certain movement from the local to the global’ (Hamel, 1993, p.34, cited by Willig, 2008, p. 86). Hence, where case studies are carried out in sufficient numbers, this can lead to knowledge and understanding about ‘general trends and the typicality of occurrences’ (Willig, 2008, p. 86). This is consistent with the aim of a narrative methodology, whereby a winder understanding can be developed through the authentic expression of individual narratives (Cefai & Cooper, 2009)

Quality criteria and impact

Yardley (2000, 2017) details procedures for enhancing, demonstrating and evaluating the quality of qualitative research. These can be grouped into four dimensions including sensitivity to context, commitment and rigor, transparency and coherence, and impact and importance. Such dimensions are said to be general, open-ended and flexible to account for the wide diversity of qualitative approaches. Sensitivity to context firstly includes an awareness and sensitivity of the context of theory and previous research, including an awareness of the various ‘categories and distinctions that have been applied to the topic’ (Yardley, 2000, p. 220). However, it is important that the findings of the study remain in the foreground so as not to yield a ‘top down’ approach to research (Watts, 2014). In order to ensure such factors in my research, I firstly thoroughly examined previous research linked to the present study, which can be found in both the literature review and discussion chapters. Careful consideration was given to epistemological
positioning and research design and methodology, which also involved a thorough examination of current research and theory. My analyses are informed by the narratives provided by the participants, which is then discussed in relation to current research. This therefore ensures a ‘bottom up’ approach to research.

In order to further ensure sensitivity to context, an awareness of the socio-cultural context is also important, including ‘the normative, ideological, historical, linguistic and socioeconomic influences on the beliefs, objectives, expectations of all participants, including those of the investigator’ (Yardley, 2000 p. 220). Billington (2006) speaks of the importance of a ‘social interactionist’ model, which recognises that individual operate within social and historical contexts (p. 7). Hence, an awareness of the social context is vital, in terms of the relationship between myself and the participants, and the ways in which identities and shared understandings are constructed. This includes an awareness of my own actions and characteristics, and how these shape communication, meaning and understanding (Yardley, 2000). In addition, rather than viewing speech as revealing internal feelings or opinions, this research project will view speech as ‘an act of communication intended to have specific meanings for and effects on particular listeners’ (Yardley, 2000, p. 221). Reflectivity and reflexivity is emphasised by Billington (2006), who highlights that scrutiny of our own professional practice is essential, so that we can ‘understand more of what we are doing and to open our eyes to the effects of our actions’ (p. 8).

Reflexivity and reflectivity was ensured through several ways in this research journey. Regular reflective tutorials were held with my research supervisor throughout the duration of the project, as well as entries into my research diary throughout. This provided opportunity to sensitively reflect on decisions and the direction of the research, as well as reflecting on tentative interpretations of the narratives. According to Stake (1994) ‘good researchers deliberately challenge their own emergent findings, pursuing rival explanations supported by data and strengthening conclusions about what is learned’ (p. 33). Such reflections and thoughts can also be found within the reflective boxes that are included throughout this paper.

Commitment and rigor is a further characteristic of good qualitative research, referring to prolonged engagement with the topic and skill in the methods used. Watts (2014) speaks of the fact that the single most important factor resulting in quality within qualitative research is a skillful and creative researcher. I anticipate this research project to be a learning journey, and whilst I do not claim to be an expert in any of the methods
chosen, I hope that my skills as a researcher will be refined and developed as a result, alongside reflection and reflexivity. Rigor in analysis and interpretation is vital, which should take place at several 'levels' (Yardley, 2000; Watts, 2014). A further discussion around my chosen analytic strategy can be found in the preceding chapter. An additional quality factor is ‘coherence’ which refers to a ‘fit’ between the research question and the epistemological positioning, as well as the method of investigation and analysis. As highlighted, the methodological choices are a fit with my epistemological positioning. This includes use of narrative methodology, as mentioned previously. Case study design also fits within a social constructionist perspective, since case studies can reveal multiple and alternative realities (Stake, 1994). As Stake (1994) highlights, case studies can ‘open windows to deeper realisation’. In order to be transparent, research should disclose all relevant aspects of the process, including data collection and analysis (Yardley, 2000) which I aim to do throughout the main body of this paper as well as through reflective boxes.

‘Impact and importance’ is a further factor indicative of good qualitative research, referring to its usefulness and value in relation to the objectives and intentions (Yardley, 2000). The value of qualitative research is often in presenting novel or challenging perspectives in order to understand a topic differently (Yardley, 2000). Watts (2014) refers to the mistaken assumption that in order to be ‘generalisable’, research must be carried out in large numbers. It is stated that it is possible to generalize from small samples where it is done in relation to ‘concepts, categories, theoretical propositions and models of practice’ and that this can be enough in order to ‘contradict or undermine established definitions of a particular concept, to question current treatment or mode of professional practice in relation to a particular category of people’ (p. 120). Thomas (2010) speaks of the value of the ‘rich and detailed study of individual cases’ in aiding understanding of experience (p. p. 257). The aim of this research is therefore to potentially challenge current practices and ways of thinking with regards to young people who are deemed ‘at risk’ of exclusion.

**Summary**

- I position myself within social constructionism, drawing on feminist and critical realist perspectives whereby the effects of power structures in individual lives are recognised.
- I will take a narrative approach to data collection, which fits with my intentions in raising marginalised voices and challenging practices which silence. Narrative recognises the interpretive nature of the research process, as well as the effects of culture and society on individual narratives. I aim to ‘look beyond language’ as an
interpretation of meaning, so as not to assume ‘an unproblematic relationship between words and meaning’ (Frankham & Kerr, 2009 p. 417).

- Data collection will draw on narrative therapy based prompts in order to thicken stories and examine exceptions.
- A case study design will be used in order to develop an in depth, holistic understanding of the ‘swap’ from multiple perspectives.
- Quality criteria will be reflected on and embedded throughout, as well as my own reflexivity regarding my role in constructing and interpreting.
Chapter 3: Research Procedures

Overview

Whilst the previous chapter detailed an overview of my methodological choices, this chapter will detail specific procedures that were implemented and followed. I will begin with a reflection on ethical considerations, leading on to detail participant selection. A reflection on the pilot study will follow, as well as details regarding specific procedures for data collection. I will end with a critical discussion around my chosen analytic strategy.

Ethical considerations

An ethical application was submitted and approved prior to undertaking any data collection or approaching participants (see appendix 3) Ethical guidelines as detailed in the British Psychological Society ‘Code of Ethics and Conduct’ (2018) as well as the BPS ‘Code of Human Research Ethics' (2014) were adhered to throughout. ‘Owen’s’ mum ‘Sarah’ was contacted initially by telephone in order to provide information about the study. With verbal consent from Sarah, I then contacted Miss Williams by telephone so as to explain the research and to ask if she would like to take part. I arranged to see Miss Williams and Owen in school, to introduce the research project and provide the opportunity for questions. I gave Owen the consent and information sheets to take home and read, and I then met both Owen and his mum at home to confirm that they wanted to take part and gain written consent.

All participants were given information and consent sheets to read and sign before commencing the study (see appendix 4). Parental consent was also sought for the young person’s involvement. I verbally explained all of the information in person, to ensure that all participants fully understood. Participants were advised that consent was voluntary and that they could withdraw at any time. This was also reinforced at the start of the interviews. I emphasised that participants could say as much or as little as they would like during the interviews, which was important since I recognised the potential for the interviews to illicit some distressing memories, which was discussed openly. A key person was identified for the young person in school, should he wish to access further support. At the end of the interviews, time was given to check how participants were feeling and whether any follow up support was needed. At the beginning of the session, participants were informed that information shared would remain confidential unless it raised concerns over the safety, health or welfare of them or relevant others (BPS 2014, 2018).
Participant confidentiality was ensured throughout the research process (BPS 2018, HCPC, 2016). Interview data was stored on a password protected device and anonymised during transcription. All participant names, as well as names of others and places were changed (see appendix 5 for pseudonyms used for anonymisation).

Participants

i. Selection of participants

Purposive sampling was employed whereby participants were ‘selected due to criteria of relevance to the research question’ (Willig, 2008, p. 61). The following criteria for the young person was employed in order to identify a suitable case study:

1. Of secondary school age
2. Had done a ‘school swap’ through the Fair Access Panel within the last year as an alternative to permanent exclusion, and had remained in that new school.
3. Not looked after.

I initially encountered some difficulties in recruiting participants and so I tried several methods. Firstly I contacted a staff member in charge of coordinating the ‘Fair Access Panel’ (FAP) within the local authority. After many requests, I received a short list of names who met the criteria above. However, parents were either reluctant to speak with me or the telephone number did not work. Towards the end of the summer term 2018, through my fieldwork supervisor, I received a list of names of school staff identified as ‘head of inclusion’ across the secondary schools within the local authority. I emailed these staff members in order to provide information regarding the study and to ask if there would be a suitable case study within the school. Following this email I received one email from a member of staff (‘Miss Williams’) on the last day of the summer term. She indicated that there was an ‘ideal’ student in the school and that she would get back to me in September.

Since I was keen to identify and recruit participants ideally before September, I spoke with my Fieldwork Supervisor and in August 2018 gained access to a system detailing all of the children who had gone through the Fair Access Panel as an alternative to permanent exclusion within the local authority. This system detailed when the ‘swap’ had taken place and why, which school the child came from and which school they were currently placed in, as well as parental contact details. Over the course of a few days, I called several parents whose child appeared to meet the criteria as above. Many of the numbers that I called did not work, and a few did not answer the call. Some parents that I spoke to did not want their child to take part in the study. I then called ‘Owen’s’ mum
‘Sarah’ and she immediately expressed an interest in taking part. I realised at that time that this child was the same child that Miss Williams had emailed me about before the summer. The procedures detailed above within the ‘ethics’ section were then carried out.

### Reflection

I had not anticipated that I would face such difficulty in recruiting participants, and as such I was not able to begin the interview process until the Autumn term of 2018. Of course staff are very busy and priorities are not always shared. I also wondered whether parents perhaps viewed my role within the LA negatively, potentially heightened by negative experiences within the education system.

I had initially hoped to include four participants within the case study. In addition to participants already included (parent, young person, staff member at the new school), I had also hoped to interview a staff member from Owen’s previous school, in order to examine how they made sense of the process, and to gather information regarding the lead up to the swap. However, when I contacted this school, the head teacher said that there was no one available to speak with me about this. Hence, three participants were included, which I felt would enable me to explore different perspectives and conduct in-depth analysis. As is highlighted by Thomas (2017), case study provides a ‘rich, in depth explanatory narrative’ (p. 254).

### Reflection

I wondered if the school perhaps felt wary about speaking to be about Owen’s swap, as well as my intentions. I felt that this unwillingness was indicative that perhaps some of the perceptions and attitudes surrounding ‘swaps’ and the ‘fair access panel’ is in need of development. From my perspective, talking and sharing practice is necessary so that we are able to learn from situations and develop practice, in order to effectively support vulnerable children, young people and families.

#### ii. Descriptions of participants

‘Owen’ (young person)

When I spoke with Owen in Autumn term of 2018, he was twelve years old and in Year Eight. Owen had completed a ‘school swap’ as an alternative to a permanent exclusion in January 2018, and he remained at the ‘swap’ school. This ‘swap’ was initiated due to a one-off incident (a fight between Owen and another student) which had happened
at his previous school in the Autumn term of 2017, when he was in Year Seven. Owen lives between his mum (‘Sarah’) and his dad (‘Mike’).

‘Sarah’ (Owen’s mum)

Sarah has two children including Owen and his older sister. Sarah left Owen’s dad ‘Mike’ due to a difficult relationship, including domestic violence when Owen was young.

‘Miss Williams’ (staff member)

Miss Williams is the Associate Assistant Principal at Owen’s new school. She is also responsible for the transition of those CYP who come to school through ‘FAP’. Miss Williams had overseen Owen’s transfer and was judged to be the member of staff most appropriate for me to speak with in school.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reflection</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I discussed with Miss Williams regarding which member of staff would be most appropriate for me to speak with in school. There was the possibility of speaking with a particular teaching assistant whom Owen had developed a positive relationship with. However, after discussing the purpose of the research with Miss Williams as well as reflecting with my research supervisor, it was decided that she would be the most useful person for me to speak with. This was due to her having a good knowledge of the FAP system, as well as a good overall knowledge of Owen’s progress in school. With my research supervisor I reflected on the fact that if I had interviewed the TA, perhaps this would have revealed rich information regarding Owen’s day to day life in school.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I also reflected with my research supervisor regarding interviewing Owen’s father. It was decided that speaking with Owen’s father may have led to some ethical complications, due to some sensitive information disclosed by Sarah in her initial conversations with me (linked with domestic violence). It was felt that speaking with Owen’s mother would provide rich information in order to answer my research questions, in terms of providing parental perspective. Further reflections regarding selection of participants are discussed in the limitations section of this paper (see chapter 5).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Pilot study**

For an explanation of the pilot study and how it assisted my research procedures, please see appendix 6.
**Data collection**

Data was collected by means of narrative style interview with semi-structured interview prompts (see appendix 1, 7). A narrative interview seeks to gather a ‘narrative’ which as discussed refers to a ‘story’ about a person’s life and experienced reality (Lieblich, Tuval-Mashiach & Zilber, 1998). As Emmerson and Frosh (2009) state, narrative analysis begins with ‘collecting narratives in ways that allow participants to thoughtfully talk about the issues with which the researchers, and hopefully the participants themselves, are concerned’ (p. 32). I intended that the interviews should be ‘open’ allowing my research questions to be answered, but also allowing for talk that is both flexible and rich (Emmerson & Frosh, 2009). Questions were open ended so as to allow participants to have a choice on the sequence, order, hierarchy and selections for the narrative. Hence, the interview prompts were used as a general guide only. As Emmerson and Frosh (2009) state, flexibility is also important for rapport.

**Reflection**

After conducting the pilot study, I reflected with my research supervisor regarding the fact that I felt the pilot study interview schedules were too prescriptive. We agreed that in order to allow participants to have control over the narratives, the interview prompts would act as a guide only.

Narrative style prompts served to thicken and add depth to stories (see appendix 1). For example, prompts included asking participants to give more information, to clarify, provide an example and to look for exceptions. Looking for exceptions is key to narrative based practice, since this can seek out alternative stories and highlight possibilities for change (McQueen & Hobbs, 2014). I intended that my questions would be flexible and open enough to allow participants to ‘exercise choice in when, how much and in what ways they ‘talk’ (Emmerson & Frosh, 2009 p. 34). I hoped that the interviews would invite participants to express their own views about how they see, say, and think about things (Emmerson & Frosh, 2009).

As cited by McQueen and Hobbs (2014), conversations drawing on narrative principles allow a relationship to develop that is based on genuine partnership (McQueen & Hobbs, 2014). I aimed to show unconditional positive regard during my interviews as highlighted by Rogers, which is said to contribute to the therapeutic quality of relationships (Winslade, 2013). I felt that developing this positive relationship was essential, in order for participants to trust me enough to share their stories. I was aware that particularly Owen may perhaps struggle to express himself and his emotions, in being only 12 years of age.
4As such I had planned to use the ‘life grid’ visual approach (see appendix 6 for information), as well as some ‘feelings’ cards if needed. However, I found that Owen, as well as Miss Williams and Sarah were all very articulate and so I did not feel the need to use any of these tools.

Participants were given the option regarding where the interviews would be held. I spoke with Sarah at her home and I spoke with both Owen and Miss Williams in school. I met with Sarah once and her interview lasted 2 hours in total. I met with Owen firstly for 46 minutes and then again for a further 33 minutes. I met with Miss Williams for 38 minutes and then for a further 23 minutes. The second interview asked follow up questions in order to gain more detail and to ‘thicken stories’. I did not meet with Sarah for a second time as I felt that I had enough information from the first interview, and also due to time constraints. After reflecting with my research supervisor, I decided not to share my analyses with participants, due to the interpretative nature of the research. I am however in the process of arranging to meet participants following submission of this thesis and prior to the Viva. I also hope to provide a summary to the Local Authority (see appendix 8).

**Reflection**

I reflected with my research supervisor with regards to sharing analyses with participants. I decided not to, due to the interpretive nature and sensitivity of some of these interpretations. However, we discussed the fact that I did want to go back to participants to share the general findings of the study, in terms of recommendations to the Local Authority. I also felt that this was important, in order to express my gratitude and to reassure them that their interviews will hopefully make a difference to future practice. I hoped that this would be empowering for them.

Interviews were audio recorded and reflexive notes were recorded immediately after, detailing comments on relational dynamics as well as emotional responses (e.g. Emmerson & Frosh, 2009). Transcription conventions from Jefferson (2004) were used:

**Table 1: Transcription conventions**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Symbol</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(.)</td>
<td>Pause less than 1 second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3)</td>
<td>Pause length in seconds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>([laughs])</td>
<td>Non-verbal communication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ ]</td>
<td>Speech overlaps</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Underscore</td>
<td>Emphasis</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Analytic strategy

The Listening Guide was chosen as an approach to analysis, which ‘offers a way of listening that is designed to facilitate psychological discovery’ (Gilligan, 2015). The Listening Guide has foundations in feminist research which fits with my epistemological positioning. It was developed in the 1990’s as a qualitative research method after recognition of the fact that psychological literature tended to reflect

‘a gender binary and hierarchy that privileged autonomy over intimacy and relationships, reason over emotion, and actively discouraged research on women and girls as if human were synonymous with masculine and the category feminine could only confuse the issue’ (Gilligan, 2015 p. 70).

Rather than categorizing a narrative into themes, the guide allows us to really listen to the ‘multiplicity of voices that speak within and around us’ including those at the margins whose voices are often silenced (Gilligan & Eddy, 2017). Attention is directed towards the ‘interplay of voices’, as well as the ‘relationship of different voices to one another’ (Gilligan, 2015 p. 70). It attends to the dynamics of the research relationship, as well as paying attention to the cultural setting. In this way, an interpretation is viewed within a contextual framework. ‘Voice’ is seen to represent not only cultural and physical space, but also the ‘inner psyche’, therefore bringing together ‘inner’ and ‘outer’ worlds (Gilligan, 2015). The Listening Guide listens for what is often unspoken and recognises the fact that words do not necessarily reflect what we mean. It listens for contradictions and how different voices may contradict or silence one another, as well as how societal and cultural frameworks affect ‘what can and cannot be spoken and heard’ (Gilligan & Eddy, 2017). As Lancy’s (1977) model of discourse analysis asserts, ‘all cannot be captured within the words themselves’ (Billington, 2006, p. 78).

The Listening Guide is said to incorporate aspects of narrative and thematic analysis, as well as elements of grounded theory. However, it differs in the specified series of three ‘listenings’, including ‘listening for the plot’ ‘listening for the I’ and ‘listening for contrapuntal voices’ (Gilligan, 2015). ‘Listening for the plot’ involves looking at the landscape of the narrative, including who is present, the emerging ‘themes’, salient images and my own emotional responses. Such factors therefore reflect the importance of reflexivity, reflectivity and sensitivity to context in assuring quality in qualitative research (e.g. Yardley, 2000, 2017.) Unlike thematic analysis, The Listening Guide allows for salient
‘themes’ to emerge without needing repeated instances of these ‘themes’. ‘Listening for the I’ attends to the first person voice and asks ‘how the I speaks of acting and being on this psychological landscape’ (Gilligan & Eddy, 2017 p. 78). Each ‘I phrase’ is separated from the narrative and an ‘I poem’ is created. This allows us to ‘recognise patterns in the way the I moves’ and ‘hear the many ways an individual speaks of themselves’ as well as ‘illuminate the ways in which our minds work in deep connection to our emotions’ (Gilligan & Eddy, 2017, p. 79). Finally ‘Listening for contrapuntal voices’ allows us to listen for voices that speak to the research question and inform the inquiry, as well as listening for the different voices and their interplay. It listens to what is said as well as what is not said (Gilligan & Eddy, 2017). Such an approach is in line with the importance of ‘rigor’ in qualitative analysis and interpretation (e.g. Yardley 2000, 2017).

Colour coding was used to represent the different stages and aspects of analysis:

**Table 2: Colour coding for analytic strategy**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Listening</th>
<th>Aspect of analysis</th>
<th>Colour used in transcript</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Listening for the plot</td>
<td>My own interpretations, reflections, values, assumptions and emotional resonances</td>
<td>Pink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Salient themes, striking metaphors, character, place and events</td>
<td>Light green</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Repeated words and phrases</td>
<td>Blue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Narrative voice, social and cultural context</td>
<td>Orange</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Listening for the ‘I’</td>
<td>These were not highlighted in the individual transcripts with a particular colour. First person phrases were identified and inserted into a separate document.</td>
<td>Dark green</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Listening for contrapuntal voices</td>
<td>Voices that speak to the research question Listening for different voices and interplay</td>
<td>Dark green</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Reflection**

I reflected with my research supervisor regularly regarding methodological choices. We considered the fact that narrative methodology fits well within social constructionism, since narrative helps individuals to make sense of themselves and others. Furthermore, narratives can change and be challenged, which has a liberatory function. Likewise, we discussed possible analytical options, in relation to those methods which would allow for a good fit within my epistemological positioning, and which would allow for my research questions to be answered. We also felt that The Listening Guide was an approach which allowed for and recognised my own interpretations and positionality, as well as my reflexivity and reflectivity in connection to these.

**Summary**

- The study is grounded in ethical practice as informed by the HCPC and the BPS, as well as the university’s ethics panel.
- Three participants were selected due to their involvement in a ‘school swap’ (case study). I have reflected upon the difficulties faced in recruitment and the possible reasons for this. These are important learning points in reflecting on our practice with children and families ‘at the margins’.
- A pilot study helped me to refine my approach to data collection, including a revised interview schedule that allowed participants flexibility in constructing their own narratives.
- Data collection was by means of narrative interviews using semi-structured prompts and narrative therapy based prompts.
- Transcription and analysis followed. The Listening Guide was chosen as an approach to analysis due to links to my epistemological positioning.
Chapter 4: Analysis

Overview

In referring to the structure of a thesis, Clough and Nutbrown (2012) speak of the ‘potential for a variety of structures and styles of study’ (p.242). It is highlighted that some researchers will present ‘analysis, findings and discussion in a series of chapters’ (p. 242) rather than combining these sections.

In this section I present salient aspects of the narratives, alongside my initial analyses of the interviews that took place with participants Owen, Sarah and Miss Williams (see appendix 9 for analysed transcripts, appendix 10 for maps showing composition of analysis for each participant and appendix 11 for ‘I poems’ for each participant.) These analyses are informed by ‘The Listening Guide’ and my research questions (see page 22).

Analytical steps and process taken

Firstly, the narrative interviews were transcribed. The three ‘Listenings’ as informed by The Listening Guide were then carried out. This generated a rich amount of data for each participant. My aim was to present the most salient aspects of the analysis, so as to represent the participant stories as fully as possible. A bottom up approach to presenting the story of the narratives was employed. This firstly included taking individual aspects of the narratives and analysis, generated through the three step listening process (all of the rich analysis can be found in appendix 9). These aspects were then grouped under similar ‘themes’ or ‘sections’, using post it’s and strips of paper (see appendix 12 for an example of this process for Owen). For each ‘theme’ or ‘section’, a ‘key’ or ‘salient’ quote was chosen to represent this general theme. Initially, the amount of information under each ‘section’ was very large. Due to word count limits, this was reduced down into what I felt were the most ‘salient’ aspects of the analysis. What I considered to be most ‘salient’ was informed in light of my positionality, experiences as a teacher and as a TEP. These are ultimately a matter of choice and judgement, whilst I also strived for commitment and responsibility towards participants, so as to convey authenticity through their narratives. Such an approach to analysis fits with Yardley’s (2000, 2017) criteria for ensuring quality in qualitative research (as discussed). A brief description of the general ‘theme’ or ‘section’ is presented at the start of each section (also see appendix 10 for a summary of each theme). The analysis of the data as informed by the three step listening process is presented in this chapter.
This chapter allows for a consideration of how each individual participant makes sense of the ‘swap’ experience, therefore allowing the presentation of their story as a whole. Through this presentation I hope to ‘respect each individual story’ (Parker, 2005, p. 72). In the following chapter I then consider how narratives relate to one another as well as the wider literature base. Since many of the themes overlap between participants, it was felt that this was the most effective way to answer research questions and consider the study in relation to existing literature.

It is again important to highlight that these analyses present my own interpretation of narratives. I recognise that there are many possible interpretations and I do not claim to represent ‘truth’ in my presentation of analyses (e.g. Frosh, 2007). As Frankham and Kerr (2009) state, the assumption that ‘truths’ can be uncovered and ‘realities’ can be accessed is problematic, since there are in fact many versions of reality.
‘I just found it stupid’ (line 2)

This theme relates to my perception of Owen’s mixed emotions regarding the entire ‘swap’ process.

I feel that Owen’s narrative begins with him emphasising his sense of injustice towards the situation:

2. O: (. ) I just found it stupid being honest.
14. O: And it (. ) I just found it stupid.
132. I spent (. ) three days in exclusion which (. ) drove my absolute head in.

His voice is louder and more assertive than later in his narrative and he clearly has a range of mixed emotions regarding his ‘school swap’. Although unsaid, I wondered whether Owen’s statement that it was ‘stupid’ was perhaps masking his ‘true’ feelings and his vulnerability towards the situation.

Throughout his narrative, Owen seems to want to emphasise this portrayal of school staff, systems and decision making around the ‘swap’ as being somewhat ‘incompetent’. For example:

22. O: teachers didn’t help me if I were struggling
30. O: (. ) All I had to do were sit at home (. ) and (. ) that were it.
56. O: (. ) I got given this piece of Bob Marley that I had to fill in. (1) I’ve never listened to a song of Bob Marley.
82: O: they didn’t help me.

He appears to speak of the students at his old school in a similar way:

170. O: But I’d rather be at a strict school where all ??? than be at a school full of (. ) all the idiots and thicco’s that always want to mess about and get into scraps all the time.

Although unsaid, I wondered if Owen’s true feelings were that he felt a sense of betrayal and that he was ‘discarded’ by the old school. I wondered if his portrayal of peers as being ‘idiots and thicco’s’ served as a defense mechanism, masking his true feelings of vulnerability, which are revealed as his narrative progresses. Owen’s ‘I poem’ perhaps reveals the mixed emotions that he feels towards the whole process:
I just found it stupid
I understand
I’m wanting to learn.
I were struggling
I couldn’t go out
I’m just bored
I were restricting everybody.
I can’t understand

Heightened and mixed emotions are also emphasised during those occasions where he becomes very emotional in his narrative (see lines 152, 154, 342, 344 in appendix 9).

‘Does no one care about me?’ (line 152).

This theme links with my perception of Owen being isolated and without anyone understanding his needs or feelings, throughout the swap process.

As Owen’s narrative progressed, although unsaid, I got a sense that he perhaps had not had much opportunity to talk about ‘the incident’ and to make sense of the ‘school swap’ experience, but that he desperately wanted to. Owen’s language in describing his experience of the school swap crafts a narrative of him being a ‘victim’ and feeling isolated, whereby he felt quite powerless:

12. O: [ Yeah (.)] when I were like (.) cos they put me on what they call twilight.
22. O: at one point ended up having to do summat outside of school (.) just so I weren’t missing out on me learning.
30. O: (.) in (.) in between it I couldn’t(.) go out
42. O: It’s not them(.) that’re suffering from it it’s me.

Here Owen’s language perhaps highlights feelings of powerlessness, such as his comments that ‘they put me on’ and ‘I couldn’t go out’. His feelings of being in a powerless position, and of being a ‘victim’ are further highlighted through his comment that he ‘had to’ access a private tutor and that he was ‘suffering’.

I felt that Owen was also keen to share his wider narrative, in terms of his previous school experiences and home life. In order to place Owen’s feelings of isolation in context, through this wider narrative I got a sense that school represents a ‘refuge’ for him, whereby he can feel successful and a sense of belonging. This is demonstrated through the following key episodes:
52. O: me and Ben has built (..) up like (..) a friendship.

206. O: (2) So it were like first (..) words of German I heard and (..) I were in top set cos I (..) think (..) they thought (..) if we put him in top set then we can always work him down. (..) And I still haven’t been moved down now (..) and (..) it’s (1) it’s like a second (..) me second language now.

213. R: (1) So how does it make you feel that you’ve not had to be moved down then?

214. O: (1) Happy and proud.

372. Er (..) so I did it and (..) Miss that like were proper praising me for it (..) and I'm swapping her as me drama teacher.

415. R: Yeah ok (..) mm hmm. (..) And how did you feel about her praising you?

416. O: I felt really (..) happy and proud.

The importance of school being a place of acceptance, belonging and achievement for Owen is perhaps further emphasised by the difficult home life that he experiences (discussed below). I felt that this refuge and ‘safe base’, as well as a sense of ‘acceptance’ that he seems to seek from school was in many ways taken away from him due to the ‘swap’. For example, Owen’s portrayal of feeling ‘isolated’ and ‘not listened to’ is further emphasised through his recount of ‘the incident’ which led to the swap. After he explains that he was bullied by this same peer in primary school (see lines 128-130 in appendix 9) he states:

130. O: he started square up to me (..) and (..) we got in a fight. (1) But cos he were down and everyone were around me saying oh kick him kick him kick him (..) and I were being shoved and all of that and everyone were going like that ((shows finger moving)) symbolizing kicking. (1) I ended up doing it (..) thinking (..) oh this'll make me more popular.

131. R: Mm

132. O: But (..) cos he threw first punch I thought oh now'll happen to me. (..) Whereas instead (..) he got told to go to hospital cos he were being sick (..) and I just
got told (.) oh you’re in (.) exclusion. (.) But then (.) some people (.) it turned out some people had recorded it (.) so I end up (.) off school for two days. (1) And ended up spending (.) I were gonna meant to be spending one day (.) in exclusion. (.) Instead I spent (.) three days in exclusion which (.) drove my absolute head in.

Here Owen appears to be emphasising the ‘injustice’ of the situation. Although unsaid, I feel that a sense of betrayal and isolation from peers is also suggested above, through his explaining that someone had ‘recorded it’. These feelings appear to be further highlighted in the following extracts:

134. O: And (.) saying I’m (.) racist and that. (.) Cos apparently I called him (.) an N word (.) when I didn’t.

135. R: (1) Right. (.) Who said that? Who said you’d done that?

136. O: (1) Some of other kids. (.) But all the kids (2) that were actually there during it (.) know I didn’t (.) and knew that he started it.

152. O: (.) what made it worse is (.) when we were in fight everyone were always asking oh is he alright is he alright. (1) It took me (.) to ask them (.) if I ((voice breaks)) said (.) oh does no one care about me?

137. R: Yeah.

Owen then goes on to speak about his experiences in ‘twilight’ as a punishment (reduced school hours spent in isolation). Again he seems to emphasise his feelings of not being listened to or understood by both school staff and peers:

134. O: But every morning (.) I had to write (.) why I were in there. (.) And (.) whenever I wrote summat that were true (.) all the teachers looked right shocked and said (.) oh you can’t write that in cos we cos don’t (.) know that’s not truth and I goes (.) what you don’t know that he punched me first. (.) And (.) saying I’m (..) racist and that. (.) Cos apparently I called him (.) an N word (.) when I didn’t.

135. O: Cos like (3) erm (.) when I were writing it (.) they’d like cos I were only one in there they just looked over your shoulder and watched you do it. (.) And then like you’d say oh yeah here look I’ve done it.

136. R: Mm.

137. O: Just looked at you and say (.) right you can write another one (1) because I doubt that’s the truth.
Reflection

Clearly Owen had engaged in some unacceptable behaviour, resulting in a student having to go to hospital. However it seemed that some exploration of the reasons behind Owen’s behaviours was needed, as well as some restorative work with the two boys. I felt that Owen was clearly struggling with mixed emotions around what had happened, including guilt, anger and confusion, although these are unsaid and seemed to be expressed through anger.

‘I’ve started to slowly fade away’ (line 102).

Owen’s feelings of becoming unimportant and forgotten by both peers and adults, as well as feelings of powerlessness are suggested through this theme.

As stated, throughout Owen’s narrative, I felt that he expressed a desire for belonging and acceptance in school. A key factor in Owen’s sense of belonging and enjoyment in school seems to be in his friendships, which are mentioned frequently throughout:

130. O: (1) I ended up doing it (.) thinking (.) oh this’ll make me more popular. (referring to the fight)

166. O: (.) I’ve got better mates (.) (referring to his new school)

232. O: (3) Happy cos they’re me mates cos (.) they’re nice. (referring to friends at new school)

527. O: me and me mates were (.) running up and down school having loads of fun and messing about. (a memory from his old school)

Owen emphasises the fact that being on ‘twilight’ following the incident caused him to lose contact with his friends:

6. O: Cos like I weren’t allowed out during them hours (.) so it made it awkward (1) for me to like (.) obviously want to interact with me mates outside of school

102. O: I’ve started to slowly fade away cos of twilight cos I’ve obviously not been able to spend as much time with [them.]

103. R: [Yeah]

104. O: I’m now just left out of things completely so I think (.) what’s the point in me asking them

105. R: Mmm
106. O: when they're just gonna say (.) oh (.) we've not seen you for however long (.) why should we start hanging back out again?

Here Owen’s language perhaps indicates a sense of resignation to the situation (e.g. line 104 ‘what’s the point’) and that he was left feeling powerless. His use of the phrase ‘fading away’ appears to portray this sense of isolation and perhaps feeling that he was not important to others. He appears to feel that peers became somewhat dismissive of him (e.g. line 106 above), indicating feelings of worthlessness or insignificance.

Owen frequently refers to his desires to do well in school and how proud he feels when he succeeds, fostering feelings of success and belonging (see above lines 206, 213, 214, 372, 415, 416) Hence, when this was taken away from him whilst on ‘twilight’, Owen states:

16. O: I were I mean when I were doing it (.) it (.) teacher that were setting it me which were me head of year were just (1) doing (1) well just giving me work that I had. (.) And if I didn't understand it (.) I literally just sat there (.) and did nowt.

20. O: I were thinking (.) I wanna get on with my work (.) cos I’m wanting to learn.

21. O. teachers didn’t help me if I were struggling

32: O: (.) All I had to do were sit at home (.) and (.) that were it.

36. O: If I (.) I can’t just sit at home at do nowt. (1) If I’m like me (1) I can’t (.) I’ve always (.) I like being on the go.

60. O: And (.) he literally said this isn’t from any of your teachers none of work I give you is. (.) This is just what I had when this lad broke his leg outside of school (referring to the work one of the teachers gave him whilst on ‘twilight’).

Here Owen appears to suggest that he became ‘insignificant’, perhaps feeling unworthy of a proper education. I feel that this sense of being ‘unimportant’ is also emphasised in his I poem:

I’m the one missing out on my learning
I did what I wanted
I’d rather talk to someone
I were doing like little jobs
I weren’t benefiting
I were only doing two hours a day
I may as well be sat at home

Hence Owen portrays this sense of ‘fading away’ and perhaps feeling not valued or important enough to get ‘proper work’ or to get help from teachers. This sense of ‘fading
away’ and becoming ‘unimportant’ is again perhaps further emphasised where Owen refers to his perception of what school staff were thinking about him:

286. O: Only thing it meant were (. ) school were saying oh (. ) we’ve still got an extra pupil. (1) And all it did were get me me mark which (. ) I mean like (. ) I were only doing two hours a day (. ) I may as well be sat at home behind a computer googling stuff.

This perhaps demonstrates that, in Owen’s mind, he became merely ‘an extra pupil’ who was not valued.

Although Owen did not explicitly refer to feelings of guilt or shame, I felt that certain aspects of his narrative did indicate such feelings:

120. O: some of ‘em (. ) had seen me there cos some of ‘em were (. ) were late or (. ) got sent out of like got told to do summat or this that and other….. and sometimes they’d see me if I were doing like little jobs up and down.

356. O: and (. ) a lot of me mates saw me when I were taking that down which were only 30 seconds job but I (. ) got seen by a lot of ‘em.

Here Owen’s use of the phrases ‘they’d see me’ and ‘I got seen’ indicate a sense of shame or embarrassment that peers saw him whilst on ‘twilight’. Again, although unsaid, I feel that this reinforces his desire to ‘fit in’ and be ‘accepted’ in school.

Reflection
Again I wondered whether Owen deserved to feel such ‘guilt’ and ‘shame’. Whilst he clearly needs to channel his emotions in a more helpful ways, it seemed that school had perhaps failed to address any underlying issues, to help the two boys to make sense of and restore the situation.

‘What kinda parent does that?’ (line 340)

Owen’s difficult relationship with his parents is highlighted in this section. This includes my perception of both positive and negative feelings, which appear to be heightened by the ‘swap’ process.

Owen speaks of his family life regularly throughout his narrative, whereby he speaks of the difficulties he faces living between two parents:
I’d rather be at this school than other school cos it’s a lot better despite me mum getting on at me for picking this school and all of that.

Me mum and me dad just end up arguing in front of Miss Williams.

But my mum always says my dad’s trying to get to her by through me whereas my dad’s saying it’s other way round and like if my dad said it were Wed Friday today mum would say no it’s not it’s Saturday.

I felt that perhaps due to Owen’s difficult home life, school was ever more important as a place of belonging, success and acceptance. Feelings of isolation after ‘the incident’ are perhaps highlighted further where he speaks of difficulties with his mum:

When I’m coming to me dad’s it’s quite good or it’s nice and good.

I can never sleep on that Sunday when I’m going back to me mum’s.

Me mum will get at me for like owt and I’m just scared that she’s gonna get on at me again for summat I haven’t done.

And then like it’s like me mum’s wanting to get me in trouble at times ((voice breaks))

Once forged a signature cos I got dared to and she were there ranting and raving at me saying oh next time I’ll call police and I’m like what kinda parent does that ((voice breaks)).

She didn’t want me to come here cos like she was saying oh if you go to this school you aint making your own way there and your own way back

Owen appears to show gratitude to his dad:

and then me dad’s there saying oh he’s only a kid it’s a silly mistake it’s not like owt massive’s gonna happen to you.

Whereas me dad’s sticking up and sees things from different point

Although Owen often seems to portray himself as ‘the adult’ or ‘the sensible one’ who tries to meet parents half way (discussed below), the statement ‘oh he’s only a kid’ (above) perhaps reveals Owen’s vulnerability in wanting to be ‘looked after’ and seen as the child that he is.

Reflection

I reflected on the fact that for Owen, a child with a difficult home life, his experiences surrounding the ‘school swap’ seemed to take away his sense of belonging and achievement. This seems to be a tragedy considering how much school can contribute to the lives of young people, particularly those with troubled home lives.
Owen demonstrates that he cares deeply for his parents. At times he speaks of his efforts to mediate situations and make things easier for them:

356. O: I were saying (.) I don't wanna go to Xold school (.) I wanna go to Xschool (.) or Xthis school. (.) Cos Xschool's in middle

364. O: She didn't want me to come here cos like she was saying (.) oh if you go to Xthis school you aint you're making your own way there and your own way back here and I goes (.) so then when I were turning round and saying I'll just stop at me dad's

He also speaks of wanting to make them proud:

420. O: (1) I told me parents.
421. R: What did they say?
422. O: They were really proud.
496. O: She's really happy about it (his mum’s thoughts on him becoming a Lawyer)

Hence, Owen indicates his concern that the adjusted school hours whilst on ‘twilight’ were inconvenient for his parents:

6. O: but just having one hour in and then one hour here it just made it horrible and (.) awkward for everybody. (.) Cos like I weren’t allowed out during them hours

284. O: I were on twilight for ages and (.) I weren’t benefiting from it. (.) No one was.

Furthermore, Owen speaks of his new school location being inconvenient for his mum’s family:

706. O: it’s not (.) practical for (.). anyone in me family for if I’m poorly or owt. (1) But like I’ve always said to if I’m poorly (2) just (.). ring me dad up (1) and I mean (.) if I’m poorly if not (.). just tell school to let me walk it and I’ll walk it down to me dad’s.

**Reflection**

The systems and procedures in place seemed to be quite inconvenient for all involved. Parents having to collect and drop off Owen for an alternative school schedule for an extended period of time seemed to be understandably difficult. Such systems hence appear to have worsened the difficulties already faced by the family. Making things inconvenient for his family seemed to increase Owen’s sense of guilt, and I wondered if this was deserved. Although Owen did seem at times frustrated by his difficult home life, I felt that what he really wanted was acceptance from them, and to make them proud. Although he did not say explicitly, I felt that this section of Owen’s narrative also reveals the fact that he was desperate to talk about his worries, and to make sense of his experiences.
‘I’m just a smart boy who’s made a stupid mistake’ (line 356)

This theme represents Owen’s perception of himself as a good student, who has made a mistake. My feelings around his determination and resilience are presented, as well as his feeling that he now has a lot to ‘prove’.

Owen presents a narrative of himself as a bright and conscientious student, stating:

248.  O: I’ve been described as a sponge
638.  O: now I’m top set for everything.

The circumstances that led to Owen’s school ‘swap’ were somewhat unusual since it was a one-off and isolated incident. As discussed, Owen’s experiences of the ‘swap’ appear to have left him feeling a range of emotions, including guilt, shame, anger and confusion. ‘The Listening Guide’ allowed for a variety of voices to emerge, one of which I feel is that of ‘powerlessness’ or being a ‘victim’ as discussed above. However, a further voice could be said to be one of resilience and agency:

36.   O: I like being on the go or keep (. ) or like doing me learning and that.
216.  O: I’ve shown ’em (. ) yeah (. ) I’ve made a mistake. (1) But (1) I won’t I’m just a smart boy who’s made a stupid mistake.
238:  O: I’m competitive. (4) If I (. ) I’ll try and make friends with people that are smarter than me (. ) cos then I think of it as a competition to try and get (. ) even (. ) smarter than they are.
298:  O: Cos I were like leaving everything behind and I thought (. ) better school here. (. ) I’ve got like it’s like a second chance for me.
468:  O: I think (. ) if I changed owt (. ) I might not be where I am today.

I feel that a key quote in Owen’s narrative is in line 216 (above). Although his determination and resilience is admirable, it seems he has been left feeling that he has so much to ‘prove’:

188:  O: now I’m getting like challenging work
400.  O: (2) Just hoping that I’d have a good (. ) day. (referring to his first day at his new school)
638.  O: Whereas now I’m top set for everything.
816.  O: And I’ve never got ((laughs)) onto EL two’s only EL one. (referring to the consequences system)
I felt that Owen was also keen to emphasise that the ‘rules’ and ‘systems’ are ‘much better’ than at his old school. I wondered if this also reflected a desire to fit in and prove himself:

170. O: But I’d rather be at a strict school where all ???? than be at a school full of (. ) all the idiots and thicco’s that always want to mess about and get into scraps all the time.

801. R: Mmm hmm (2) What about the walking in silence and all that then what do you think about that?

802. O: (3) I don’t mind it really cos like (2) it (. ) it just (2) it’s like when you’re walking in the street (1) you don’t have to talk walking do you. (1) Looks a lot more organized and (. ) better.

Owen’s determination and resilience are also reflected in his hopes for the future whereby he speaks of becoming a lawyer or a translator, and going to university (see lines 473 onward).

Reflection

I found Owen’s sense of resilience and agency inspiring. This was despite the trauma of moving schools and his often difficult home life. I wondered how a school ‘swap’ or similar experience would affect those young people who did not have such resilience and determination. Again although Owen does not say it, I suspected that his enthusiasm for the new school perhaps masked more vulnerable feelings of powerlessness and wanting acceptance.

‘This is the school I should belong at’ (line 412)

This section presents the positive factors Owen speaks of at his new school.

Despite having a strong desire to prove himself and ‘fit in’, Owen describes many positive factors in his new school. He states ‘I just like all of it’ (line 565). He speaks of teachers being encouraging:

842. O: They won’t just let you give up on first hurdle. (. ) Like (. ) if you were to say oh I don’t get it I don’t get it they’ll come and help you.
O: (1) Encouraged me helped me a lot and just (2) like if he saw my hand up he always said (.) if you need (.) if you’re struggling just put your hand up but if you’re really struggling put your (1) planner on red and arm up. (.) Cos then I’ll come to you near enough straight away. (in reference to his German teacher)

He describes the new school as a place where his confidence is being built:

192. O: here’s helped me build (.) me confidence up with me drawing
199. R: And what have they done to help you build your confidence here then?
200. O: (3) Having nice teachers that are like (.) encouraging and that.

It is a place where he is developing strong relationships with welcoming peers:

226. O: Yeah. (.) Whereas here (.) proper friendly I mean (.) I followed Xpupil on my first day
228. O: And (.) now (1) I’m like (.) and then I started to (.) kinda make some friends that are in my year (.) and I just started going with friends that were in my year.
406. O: I don’t know. (2) I mean (.) not one of em tried tormenting me they were all (.) right nice and (.) you know (1) trying to introduce themselves and that.
801. O: And I started (.) with more and more of me lessons. Erm (.) I’d get curious cos I’d start talking so I’ve ended up in (1) with me friendship in friendship group I’m in now.

It is a place where he seems to feel belonging:

411. R: Yeah. (.) Well that was good then. (.) So how did you feel at the end of the day?
412. O: (1) Er (.) I felt happy and I thought (.) this is the school I should (.) I belong at.
222. O: teachers (2) that I had last year and they all say oh hey up Owen this that and other and (3) yeah.

And feels successful:

372. O: Miss that like were proper praising me for it (referring to a drama lesson)
638. O: now I’m top set for everything.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reflection</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Although I felt that Owen should not have to feel so desperate to fit in and prove himself, it is clear that there are many positive factors within his new school that are working well for Owen. These need to be recognised alongside the limiting factors discussed. I felt that perhaps since Owen is doing well, his feeling that school is a place that he can have some control over is returning, which gives him a sense of stability as compared to his home life.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
This section presents Sarah’s feelings of being let down by professionals as well as her ex-husband, both during the ‘swap’ process, and throughout Owen’s school life in general.

Sarah begins her narrative in speaking about the circumstances which led to the ‘school swap’ following ‘the incident’. She describes the situation whereby she was shown a video of the ‘fight’, and then felt a duty to show this to the school:

92. S: (2) and I’ll be honest (1) I got sent the video
93. R: oh did you
94. S: [and I] I took it to the school
95. R: right
96. S: I blame myself I wish I hadn’t have done

She continues:

8. S: I got assured that (.) what punishment had been put in place (.) would still stand so that were the exclusion
9. S: R: Mm hmm
10. S: Er (.) that came from Mr X (.) Mr X (.) erm showed it to somebody else and they said no, Owen had to go. So we’d got staff members and his head of year 7 saying that no, what’s in place will remain in place (.) but then they did a U-turn and he had to leave.
104. S: and they reassured me that there were no repercussions (.) what they did with Owen stands and he goes back to normal
105. R: [yeah]
106. S: well (.) they lied

Sarah appears to feel very let down by school staff in their decision making, since initially she was led to believe that Owen had a fixed term exclusion only. Her anger and frustration is shown through her statement ‘they lied’. Regarding the video of ‘the incident’, Sarah goes on to state:
S: I think the school were more annoyed that I managed to get hold of it (1) but I di-to me I did the right thing by letting the school aware (1) but then it turned into a big witch hunt

R: [mm]

S: which weren’t easing up because they pulled absolutely everybody (.) in (.) and they questioned and questioned and questioned. And I wouldn’t tell them the source cos they did it in confidence

Whilst Sarah appeared to want to foster a relationship with staff to repair the situation, her frustration that the school agenda was so different is apparent. Through her portrayal of anger, I wondered whether Sarah was perhaps masking feelings of vulnerability here, in feeling vulnerable and powerless.

Sarah’s feelings are also accentuated by her desires to ‘do the right thing’ (line 156) by showing them the video, despite it showing the full extent of the fight and leaving herself and Owen somewhat vulnerable:

erm (.) my words to Mr X is (.) it doesn't matter where it’s come from (.) we (.) we’ve (.) it’s here

S: so we know there’s one. (.) and that (.) I’m showing you

S: Well, I’ll be honest with you (.) it weren’t a nice vid- it weren’t nice

S: and I can recall (.) erm (.) the (1) the noise that it made (1) er (.) the child go to hospital just to be checked out

Sarah feeling ‘let down’ by professionals throughout the FAP process seems to feature regularly throughout her narrative. She frequently refers to the original school ‘letting her down’:

60. S: from a parents perspective (1) saying that that’s the only punishment that he’s coming back in to then being kicked out of school (1) I don’t think that’s acceptable

61. R: No

62. S: That’s false promises false hopes

166. S: and yeah no no further action were taken (.) bu- (.) but he did. They did. So why promise something me (.)

Sarah’s wider narrative puts her feelings into context. For example, she appears to feel ‘let down’ by staff when Owen was in primary school. In reference to some ‘bullying’ that Owen experienced, she states:
S: All these things went on
S: In primary school
S: they didn’t even pass a record (.) over to (.) Xold school.

As well as feeling ‘let down’, here Sarah highlights an apparent lack of communication between the two schools in relation to Owen’s needs. She also presents as feeling ‘let down’ by Owen’s father (‘Mike’) whom she separated from due to difficult circumstances:

S: I left his dad for domestic violence

Throughout her narrative, Sarah speaks of her difficult relationship with Owen’s dad currently:

S: I phoned school up to tell them that Owen witnessed his dad turning up at school (.) and being (.) verbally aggressive towards myself.
S: It’s not it’s not good
S: [yeah] but they’re supposed to have (.) staff out watching children and stuff
S: but they weren’t out
S: er (.) but end of day (2) if their presence had of been there (.) his dad may have been different.
R: yeah yes.
S: I’m not saying he would have been (1) cos I’ve been (.) there in a mediation room with him when he’s (.) held his fingers in a gun shape (.) to shoot me
S: I’ve been threatened (.) in in public.

It seemed that Sarah felt further let down by professionals who had not noticed these difficulties, or been able to help in any way, which she appears to desperately want. She later states:

S: (.) And they’re witnessing (.) yet again
S: (.) the way that I get treated
Sarah speaks of her hopes that things will get better between her and Mike, however she is frequently left feeling disappointed:

**Reflection**
I had a sense that Sarah often felt powerless and vulnerable within her relationship with Mike. I felt that this then compounded her feelings of being ‘let down’ by staff during the FAP process and Owen’s school history generally, leaving her perhaps feeling even more powerless, angry and frustrated. Sarah’s anger perhaps reflects that she knows she is right, but that she is unheard in her attempts to do the right thing.

Sarah regularly reinforces statements such as ‘I’ll be honest’:

It seemed that Sarah genuinely wanted to share her difficulties and vulnerabilities with me, and with those around her (such as school staff) in the hope of gaining support, however she was repeatedly left feeling disappointed. **I wondered if she perhaps felt the need to**
emphasise that she was being 'honest' due to her perception that I may not 'believe' her. I wondered if this reflected her feelings of inferiority and powerlessness with regards to professionals. She further states:

496. S: well (. ) (1) help me stop from using Owen to control me
497. R: [mmm]
498. S: and then we can get Owen (.) to be the kid that he should be.
499. R: yes.
500. S: That he's entitled to be.
1372. S: I find myself in a situation where (. ) I don't know (. ) how to (3) tell him that he's (1) been naughty. (. ) And how to (1) manage it (. ) properly.

Sarah appears to be desperate to receive some support. At times she appears to want to speak directly to school staff (e.g. line 496), which almost seems like a cry for help that she feels goes unheard.

*I'm totally in the dark' (line 1382)

A lack of communication and partnership with professionals throughout Owen's 'swap' is suggested in this section.

Due to the systems around her, Sarah presents as feeling silenced in her goal of acting as an advocate for Owen. A big factor in fostering feelings of 'powerlessness' appears to be in relation to communication with professionals throughout the FAP process, as well as generally throughout Owen’s school life. Firstly, Sarah indicates that she did not fully understand the FAP process, as well as what was going on for Owen in school:

2. S: First of all I'll apologise in case I get the erm (. ) wording wrong on the processes
4. S: Yeah, so initially Owen was (. ) is it excluded for 3 days?
112. S: it were never (2) when when he went in he were in inclusion he might not have been excluded he might have just been in inclusion

She later speaks of the uncertainty, frustration and anxiety during the lead up to the SWAP, due to an apparent lack of communication. She speaks of not knowing if the FAP meeting had taken place or where Owen’s new school would be:
S: Phoning up to try and find out if a meeting’s taken place because we’re going into (.) Christmas holidays (.) err (.) cos (.) they br- they Xold school actually broke up

R: Mm hmm

S: and I’d heard nothing

S: I mean on 27th December (.) not knowing where your child

S: should be schooling (.) and if he’s going to a new school he’s gonna want a uniform

S: how on earth do you sort that out

R: course

S: (2) and that that’s how it were.

Reflection

It seems that Sarah perhaps feels powerless in the face of systems around her. In her comment ‘and that’s how it were’ it almost seems that she is resigned to the fact that this is the way things are, and she is not able to change it.

Sarah speaks of the FAP processes whereby Owen was asked about school choices:

S: Yeah. (1) But they went with (.) this Xold teacher and went to the meeting (1) and (.) it sounds like fought for Xthis school.

S: Not looking at (1) geographical

R: [yeah]

S: and anything else

R: Ok.

S: the practicalities of it

R: erm (3) did you have any say in which school he was gonna go to?

S: ((shakes head))

R: (1) th they sort of just asked Owen.

S: (1) They asked (. ) his dad [and Owen].

She speaks of her frustrations regarding the way decisions were made, and how she believes they should have been done jointly:

S: So when it comes to situation like that sometimes (1) is it actually (. ) right to ask that child

R: yeah
S: We've got to take it upon ourselves
R: Of course
S: are we making that decision
R: yeah, yeah
S: and to me they should have kinda left Owen out of it
R: yeah
S: I'm not saying don't ask the questions

Reflection
I sensed Sarah's feelings of frustration regarding the whole decision making process, and it seemed that she had been left in the dark. Sarah further emphasises the fact that she wants a collaborative approach, through the use of 'we' above. It appeared that a more joined up approach was needed, in order to ensure that all parties are heard, and decisions can be made collectively.

Sarah also speaks of her frustration with the FAP processes, due to poor communication. They had to wait a long time for the 'swap', Owen was missing education and it seems that it was inconvenient for the family:

I don't think it should be all paperwork like in that incidence if it happened on that day of meeting it should be brought up at that meeting to avoid any upset and disrupt to the education and the child.
S: [Yes] er I mean I know he's an intelligent kid but he'd of been better off still learning
R: mm hmm
S: I were doing my own stuff here at home
R: Mm hmm
S: but that's not fair.
R: (Yeah.)
S: But the fact is as well let's not forget is if that child gets seen out of school
R: Yeah
S: we can get fined. I'm sorry
R: Mmm
S: how on earth can you go for six weeks even sometimes a day without having to go out and take that child with you?
Sarah speaks of difficulties with communication with the new school, now nine months down the line:

1176. S: No (1) er term you might get (1) they call it a report it’s it’s not a report it’s absolutely rubbish(.) It just tells you the predicted grades(.) er whether it’s expected to be (1) that’s it
1382. S: (.) Cos now (1) I mean (.) to be fair I mean I’m totally in the dark. (.) Because that school is not communicating [with me at all.]
1384. S: (.) And (1) that’s not good.

She speaks of her frustrations that Owen’s dad receives information but she does not:

1478 S: We’re equal. (1) But I’m not being treat equal and there’s (.). Xthis school
1479. R: Yeah.
1480. S: is certainly not treating me as equal.
1481. R: (1) To his dad do you think or
1482. S: Yes. (2) So if if we say (2) there’s(.) an inferior and less inferior
1483. R: Yeah.
1484. S: he’s the inferior one he’s getting all the information.
1485. R: Yeah.
1486. S: He’s getting all the post cards(.) he’s getting the [text messages.]
1487. R: [Ok]
1488. S: (1) And I’m (.). not being told [nothing.]

Here Sarah seems to make reference to her feelings of inferiority within school, indicating that the systems in place have not fostered a sense of collaboration, or valued parent voice.

Reflection
Due to Sarah’s feelings of powerlessness, I felt that she perhaps sought to seek control through other means, as shown above. I wondered if this caused her to come across as ‘difficult’ in the eyes of the school, due to their possibly not understanding her position. Sarah is clearly desperate for some recognition and to feel like an equal.

Sarah speaks of the damaging effects of this lack of communication, where she is not able to praise Owen as she is ‘out of the loop’:
1490.  S: (. ) So (. ) how does that look to [Owen]
1491.  R: [Yeah]
1492.  S: when he's getting praise from one side (. ) and not from another.
1493.  R: Yes. (2) Cos you just don't know [about it.]
1504.  S: That has an impact on [a kid].

Reflection
I felt that Sarah presented as being very overwhelmed by her life circumstances, and that
this often went unsaid. I felt that Sarah’s expression of frustration towards others, as well
as comments about how much Owen may be affected, at times masked these feelings. I
felt that whilst Sarah often wanted to portray herself as strong and determined, she did
not always feel this way inside.

Sarah goes on to speak of the positive relationship with one particular TA in the new
school:

844.  S: (1) It it it were a absolutely horrendous (. ) so (2) the only person that’s ever
spoke (. ) I’ve only ever met and spoken to (. ) is XTA.
845.  R: Right Ok.
846.  S: (. ) erm (. ) she’s she’s lovely (. )
952.  S: Er (1) she (. ) often checked in on him to make sure he were ok (.) she
made sure she’d got she built that relationship up with him so that (. ) he could go to
her for (. ) anything (. ) and (1) obviously Owen’s entitled to his privacy

Reflection
This reference to the TA was one of the only positive aspects that Sarah referred to
throughout her narrative. Hence it seemed that that the negatives outweighed the
positives, and that she was simply desperate to be heard, and for someone to validate
her feelings of helplessness and frustration.

‘I come out shaking to be fair I were mortified’ (line 1668)
This section highlights Sarah’s feelings of powerlessness throughout the ‘swap’ process.

Many of the systems in place, including channels of communication, appear to have
intensified Sarah’s feelings of ‘powerlessness’ and frustrations in her lack of voice as a
parent. She speaks of a difficult first meeting with the new school:

244.  S: First meeting with her, shouting and bawling in front of Owen (1).
Sarah appears to feel mixed emotions towards this incident whereby during the first meeting at Owen’s new school, Miss Williams intervened and told parents to ‘stop arguing’. Feelings of anger as well as perhaps more vulnerable feelings are revealed, whereby she left feeling ‘mortified’. Power hierarchies seem visible here, with Sarah perhaps feeling that she was spoken to like a child. She states:

1630. S: (. ) No. (2) Seriously? (1) And ( . ) fair enough ( . ) I appreciate why she ( . ) she shouted and she spoke the way she were ( . ) and that she sent Owen out of the room. ( . ) But this is on his meeting to a new school.

1631. R: Yes.

1632. S: (. ) And they’re witnessing (. ) yet again

1633. R: Mm

1634. S: ((Coughs)) ( . ) the way that I get treated

1635. R: Yeah.

1636. S: (2) And that’s (. ) that’s the norm.

Reflection
Rather than feeling supported and understood as she had hoped, it seemed that Sarah was left feeling embarrassed and humiliated. However, this seems to be masked through feelings of anger, and I again wonder if this served as a defence mechanism for Sarah. I was left wondering if this situation could have been handled differently, so as to consider the needs of all parties, and make parents feel listened to rather than dismissed.

Throughout her narrative, Sarah appears to express her frustration in having to act as an advocate for Owen:

847. S: (. ) erm (. ) she’s she’s lovely ( . ) or (. ) but () I’m not not gonna not challenge something
Sarah’s resilience and determination is also presented through her poem:

I will go that extra mile
I’ll do it
I know I’m busy
I’ll help
I can’t always do it.
I won’t say [no.]

Reflection

I wondered whether Sarah wanted to portray an image of herself ‘fighting back’, since she perhaps thought this was what I wanted to hear. However, I wondered if she really felt as determined as this, or if in fact she was simply exhausted. I also wondered whether she sought control due to her feelings of powerlessness, demonstrated through her comments that she is ‘fighting back’.

‘He’s got this big thing hanging over him’ (line 2262)

This section highlights my perceptions of Sarah and Owen’s feelings of unease, due to worries about exclusion in the future.

Sarah frequently refers to the anxiety and uncertainty generated through a threat of exclusion that is ‘hanging over’ Owen:

658. S: it’s like (.) walking on egg shells (1) because (1) for me (.) you’ve been told one thing by staff members
659. R: mmm
660. S: and they this (.) they’ve done the opposite (1) and now what is the next stage if he gets kicked out of school (.) even for defending [himself]
2262. S: But when he’s got this big thing hanging over [him]
2263. R: [Yeah]
2264. S: that he’s gonna get kicked out
To place these feelings in context, Sarah speaks of school as being historically a ‘refuge’ for Owen, where he can achieve, feel belonging and perhaps distract himself from the troubles of his home life:

704. S: Whatever problems you’ve got at home (.) you go to work and you focus on work
705. R: Yeah
706. S: And then (.) you (.) you deal with them [when you]
707. R: [yeah]
708. S: come home (.) and I think that’s (.) exactly what Owen’s been doing for (.) quite a long time.
1120. S: (.) not to impress people.
1121. R: Yeah
1122. S: He (1) he’d want to (1) do himself good.

Sarah speaks further about the effects of the whole FAP process on Owen’s wellbeing:

64. S: Owen got (.) obviously humiliated from that then happening (referring to the SWAP and being on twilight)
220. S: Owen (.) erm (.) seemed to be handle it well (.) there were times obviously (1) it must have been hard for him cos he’s sitting in corridor seeing friends being asked questions
221. R: [mm hmm]
222. S: er (.) listening to conversations that’s going on (1) it’s (3) I recon he (.) he put on a show.
226. S: we’ll say (.) became (2) withdrawn (.) within himself. Like I said (.) he end up cutting (.) contact (1) erm (.) from his friends (2). He became isolated (.) to a degree.

Here Sarah suggests that Owen did not want friends to become aware of what was going on, which perhaps further emphasises his humiliation.
Reflection

Owen clearly shows resilience in the eyes of his mum, seen particularly through her statements that he ‘put on a show’ and ‘keeps his head down’ to ‘do himself good’. I felt this was admirable but also tragic, since he seemed under so much pressure to do the right thing. I wondered if Owen had had the opportunity to make sense of the process and share his concerns, since it seemed that Sarah was merely speculating and did not know his true feelings. I wondered if this was something that went unsaid for Sarah, and whether through our conversations she realised that she knew little about his true feelings.

Sarah speaks of Owen’s time on ‘twilight’:

30. S: What work he did wasn’t getting marked (2) and (1) this went on (.) up until (.) Christmas. (2) So his schooling suffered (.) cos obviously he weren’t there. (.) Erm he were sat (.) placed outside in a corridor (.) so all the children could see him it were the break times and stuff (1) it wasn’t to me (1) completely thought about

31. R: [mmm]

32. S: (2) there were times he would turn up and staff members weren’t there

214. S: But the work the he were being given to do (.) it weren’t proper school work, the teachers weren’t making the work.

215. R: Yeah

216. S: It were like (.) an inconvenience (.) to the school.

Although Sarah speaks of Owen feeling that he was perhaps an ‘inconvenience’ and ‘not deserving’ of proper school work, I felt that it went unsaid that due to this, she also felt that way as a parent. For example, she also perhaps felt that she became ‘insignificant’ or ‘not deserving’ of collaboration or explanation.

‘These are the years he should be learning this stuff…and we’ve like stripped that away from him’ (line 2274)

Here Sarah’s frustrations regarding her desire for Owen’s behaviours to be viewed in context are presented. She speaks of her desires to want to teach him more appropriate ways to manage his emotions.

Sarah speaks of the difficult home life that Owen has grown up in, including witnessing domestic violence and living between both parents. This seems to place Owen’s desire for
belonging, acceptance and achievement in school into context. Speaking of Owen’s
difficult home life, Sarah states:

978. S: [Yeah and he] Owen (.) has said to people that (.) he hates Mondays (2)
going back going to and forth.
979. R: Cos that’s the changeover you mean.
980. S: Changeover day yeah (.) and that’s the day he’s gotta (1) change into
that person that (1) we ex (1) we we we expect him [to be].
1028. S: You think this poor kid.

I wondered here whether Sarah was blaming herself for this situation. She speaks of Owen
having ‘nightmares’ about his dad:

1294. S: (1) and (1) our Owen (.) did tell (1) the school over road (.) about his dad
tracking me down and
1295. R: Right
1296. S: dropping him off and following us (1) and him having nightmares (.) about
burning the school er (.) burning the house down.

Sarah repeatedly reinforces the fact that she believes that Owen’s difficult home life has
led to him having difficulties with his social, emotional and mental health:

926. S: he’s entitled to defend [himself].
927. R: [yeah ] (.) yeah
928. S: But he’s also (.) to me (.) showing learned behavior of his dad

She reinforces the importance of needing to recognise Owen’s behaviours in the context of
his parenting and home life:

1098. So (.) there’s a lot of things [behind]
1099. R: [Yeah yeah] yeah
1100. S: behind it
1101. R: Yeah
1102. S: (1) but this kid is technically (.) I’m not saying the behaviour’s right
1103. R: Yeah
1104. S: (1) cos (.) by (.) no [means]
1105. R: [yeah]
Sarah speaks of her frustration in feeling that Owen needs to receive some support for his SEMH, including learning how to express his emotions in a productive way, rather than simply being ‘punished’ for the incident:

2274. S: (1) These are the years (1) he should be learning this stuff. (.) Under secondary school.
2275. R: Mm hmm
2276. S: (1) And we’ve like stripped that away from him.
2277. R: Mm hmm (.) mm hmm
2278. S: So where’s he gonna learn it?

Again Sarah appears to speak very honestly here, and seems to be openly asking for support. I wondered whether Sarah also felt that ‘something might give’ in terms of her own
abilities to remain strong. She speaks of her frustration that the old school were starting to understand about Owen’s home life, and the influence of his dad:

502. S: and that (.) that were starting to work (.) they saw (.) they saw straight through (.) his behaviour and his attitude

510. S: it’s a shame that he didn’t

512. S: stay in

514. S: because he would have got the help

Sarah goes on to refer to some SEMH support that Owen’s Old school had referred him for, and her frustration that the new school ‘stopped’ him from getting access to this support:

236. S: (2) guess who put a stop to it?

237. R: mm (3)

238. S: Miss Williams.

242. S: (3). New start. (.) New school. (.) We’ll decide.

Sarah again appears to refer to her sense of powerlessness in having professionals make decisions that she does not agree with. She seems to feel exasperated that Owen’s behavior is not put into context, and is not seen as an opportunity for teaching, to equip him with skills for later life:

1946. S: And it comes down to (.) the upbringing of a child

1947. R: mm hmm

1948. S: That’s where it blames

1949. R: Mm hmm.

1950. S: But in this aspect who would you blame?

1951. R: Mm hmm.

1952. S: We we’re both responsible (.) but I know what I’ve taught my child.

1953. R: Yeah.

1954. S: (2) But (.) obviously (.) whether he implements that I (.) that video shows that (1) he didn’t. (.) That’s not me that’s taught him (.)

1960. S: But (.) there’s (3) I think there’s (1) further steps (.) if I (.) if I were able to

1961. R: Yeah

1962. S: (.) work with schools (1) and look at (.) children (.) and be in that kind of role (1) that’s what I would be asking
Further feelings of despair are presented, whereby Sarah desperately wants to be supported to bring Owen up well. She even speaks of wanting to go back to Owen’s dad, despite the domestic violence and difficult relationship, in order to support her children:

2168. S: it's (1) if I'm honest (3) if somebody (.) if his dad (.) were to say to me (1) and I mean (1) we (.) this is fairly quiet. (1) Have me back I’d have gone back.
2169. R: Yeah
2170. S: Because their life would've been (2) more (1) easier.

This section further highlights Sarah’s feelings of powerlessness, and the tragic fact that she feels the only positive option would be to return to this man who was violent towards her. It highlights that she would do anything for her children, even if it meant putting herself at risk.

Reflection
I felt that Sarah’s views were extremely valid, in terms of understanding behaviour in context. However, she seems to be blaming herself and Owen’s home life for a lot of his difficulties, which I feel is unfair as school can also play such a vital role in working jointly with parents, to foster social and emotional wellbeing.
’Miss Williams’

’We always do believe children should have a fresh start’ (506)

Here Miss Williams’ belief in a ‘fresh start’ for children who have come through FAP are explored.

Miss Williams begins her narrative in giving her account of ‘the incident’ that led to Owen’s school swap. She explains that she spoke to the Vice Principal at the old school about ‘possible permanent exclusion’:

8. W: Erm (.) and it was the back end of just one (.) one off incident.
9. R: Yeah.
10. W: Erm which is really rare to be honest
11. R: Yeah.
12. W: that any school would make that decision. (.) When I spoke to him he said (.) when he viewed the CCTV footage it was erm Owen assaulting another child
13. R: Mm hmm
14. W: but he said it was one of the worst ones he’d seen
15. R: Oh ok (.) right.
16. W: for the (.) for the age of Owen (.) erm he he what he said he witnessed was erm (.) Owen had erm he’d had a fight with this other boy (.) got him to the ground (.) but then what he did was he persistently stamped on his head

She goes on to speak of the importance of ‘being positive’ for those children and families who have gone through the Fair Access Panel (FAP):

40 W: er because it’s supposed to be (.) whenever you’re you’re integrating a child into your school that’s come through those [systems]
41 R: [yeah]
42 W: (1) you have to try and be positive.
140. W: Which has probably caused a lot of stress (.) in the family (.) to them.
852. W: (2) those type of kids that have been through that that system (1) have clearly (.) had (.) a lot of negative

She goes on to speak of the importance of a ‘fresh start’

80. W: Erm and we always do suggest that because we we do truly believe that (.) children should have a fresh start
She refers to the perceived benefits of doing a ‘swap’ rather than a permanent exclusion:

375. W: because he hasn't got a permanent exclusion on his record (.) and he can he can have a chance at having [a fresh start.]

1008. W: (4) it’s (.) difficult cos it’s there’s not (.) really much difference. (1) The only thing (.) that I think (.) is (.) is a (.) a big difference is (.) if a child knows that a permanent exclusion exclusion has been [issued]

1009. R: [Mmm]

1010. W: or a parent does (.) they see that as then being on their child’s record.

1020. I think (1) I think if a child (.) sometimes feels they’ve got a permanent exclusion (.) on their record it’s like a heavy weight around their [shoulders.]

1021. R: [Mm hmm]

1022. W: It’s (.) it’s going with them wherever they go

1034. W: I think if a child does have a permanent exclusion on their record (.) there’s that element of (.) I’ve given up.

Miss Williams speaks of what she means by a ‘fresh start’

868. But then trying to give them a fresh start and be positive about it (.) so that’s why I was saying to you we (1) although when (.) they come over to us we (.) erm (2) they come through that system. (.) We don’t (.) we don’t share that with wider staff. (.) We do actually just give them a fresh start. (.) They’ll meet me (.) and I’ll (.) go through (.) the reasons why they’ve gone through that system

870. W: and be clear on what the expectations are but then aside from that (.) at the end of the meeting I’ll always try and (.) make it so it’s it’s (.) right we draw a line under that now (.) and then (.) right lets (.) lets have a look at what you your week would look like

She feels that children don’t want to talk about any negative experiences that have led to the SWAP:

242. W: (...) And then (1) and the minute the meeting switched to (.) right (.) leave that now (.)

243. R: Yeah

244. W: (...) we have to (...) lets look at a fresh start

245. R: yeah

246. W: he changed (...) [he sat up in his chair]

247. R: [ok]
Miss Williams describes the first meeting between Owen and his parents. She highlights that although she wanted it to be a ‘positive’ first meeting, it seems that she found this difficult since his parents were ‘bickering’.

52. W: So I ended up sending him out and then I brought him I I said to mum and dad that erm (.) I would just basically do the talking [I I knew that]

53. R: [mmm]

54. W: I didn’t really want them to [carry on disagreeing with each other.]

55. R: [mmm]

56. W: When we brought him back in then (.) we then had a really positive meeting.

962. W: I think (.) because I was quite firm with them in the meeting (1) it was rea- it was really strange like I I was like a parent telling two child- two children off (.) please don’t

964. W: don’t do that. (.) I think it just laid (.). the line clear
This section explores Miss William’s views regarding the good practice in school, in order to support pupils who have come through FAP.

Miss Williams indicates that she is very proud of her school, and the work that staff do to support students who come through the FAP process. She told me in our initial discussions that the reason she wanted to take part in the research was so that this good practice could be shared and celebrated. Throughout her narrative, Miss Williams speaks of the many ‘success stories’ that the school has experienced, as well as how well Owen is doing:

510. W: (.) Erm and honestly we’ve we’ve had (1) well Owen’s a success story.
511. R: Mm
512. W: There’s another boy in year 11 that’s a success story. (.) We’ve had girls in year 11 leave who were success stories (.) [that you you wouldn’t have thought so]
1004. W: we (1) they just seem to have (. ) coped with his move well and then he’s settled in really well [so]

She speaks of the school having ‘consistency’ in the high expectations and behaviour management systems, alongside a high level of ‘support’.

325. W: I think (1) the likes of Owen and then other kids that we’ve had come through that system (1) just respond to it straight away.
326. R: Mm hmm
327. W: They know they (. ) we’re so black and white (. )
333. W: it’ll always be like that. So erm and it’s and it still is like that for him now so (. ) I think it (1) like I say the the way that we consistently (. )
335. W: Erm manage behaviour. (.)
337. W: How we consistently have those high expectations (. )
339. W: (1) and the support’s always there.
She speaks of ‘support’ in terms of a pastoral support plan for children when they come through FAP:

708. W: erm (.) the minute any child comes in on a a (.) through Fair Access or on a SWAP
709. R: Mm hmm
710. W: is already we're already (.) monitoring them and [keeping]
711. R: [Mmm]
712. W: keeping track on whether they're meeting their targets.
713. R: Ok.
714. W: It’s things (.) when when they first come through it’ll it will be things like
   (1) not picking up behaviour points in lessons.

Reflection

There seemed to be a lot of good practice within school, however I wondered about those children who may struggle to reach those high expectations. Again I felt there was perhaps a lack of awareness around interpreting the reasons behind certain behaviours, and that for some children, such high expectations may be difficult to achieve.

Miss Williams speaks of the importance of Owen forming a positive relationship with a particular teaching assistant:

313. W: The the thing that worked for him the most (.) was I think the relationship
   he he had with XTA to start off with.
314. R: mm hm
315. W: Erm and that (.) just the pastoral care that went into him to support him.

606. W: ( .) because ( .) erm he’s had you know he’s had an awful lot of (. ) support
   from from XTA.

She speaks of the support that this TA has given to Owen’s parents:

652. W: I think and his parents as well [because]
653. R: [Ok]
654. W: his parents ( .) I think his parents (1) like ( .) XTA.
655. R: Right.
656. W: (1) Yeah she’s very down to Earth and she’s very Xlocal authority.
657. R: Right ok.
She speaks of Owen's success in taking part in 'student voice' activities:

W: (1) It's erm (.) well student voice is where they erm they they go off in groups and they erm discuss issues in the school like (.) I'm not sure which one (.) I'm not sure which group he's in (.) but they they look at different areas of the school that they want to improve and [it's basically their voice they then get to voice their opinion to SLT and]

W: (.) and they can nominate themselves to be (.) school president (.) [it's things like that.]

W: and things like that (.) and he (.) absolutely loves that.

Miss Williams speaks of the importance of ‘praise’ for Owen and for other students who come through FAP systems:

W: Just just loves it. (.) and he gets a lot of praise for it the the praise is a massive thing.

R: Right.

W: (1) Praising these children [who have been through] such a trauma of having to move schools [usually]

W: Yeah (.) cos he gets praise for it. (.) Erm (.) he he just (1) he loves (.) any kind of recognition. (.) Erm (1) and (.) especially like if they do the hospitality stuff where they support the parents evening and things. (.) He's (.) like (.) just proud as punch walking round [cos]

R: [Right]

W: he gets a (. a a well done

Reflection

Again was clear that there was lots of good practice going on at the school. Miss Williams clearly recognises the importance of positivity, praise and recognising pupil strengths after the 'trauma' of FAP. However it seemed unfair that Owen had perhaps been left feeling that he had to prove himself, whereby he seemed so desperate to receive this praise. It seemed that Miss Williams was possibly unaware of the tragedy at play here, whereby such children are then so desperate to receive praise. I felt that her claiming Owen was a ‘success story’ appeared to reflect her own perceptions rather than having asked him or his parents if they felt this way.
Miss Williams also speaks of the importance of parent involvement:

674. W: His parents were very keen [to get him back into school]
675. R: [Right (1) right]
676. W: which is helpful because sometimes a lot of those children that have
come particularly through FAP (.)
677. R: Yeah
678. W: their parents don’t really engage [very well]
679. R: [Yes]
680. W: Erm (. or are not pushing the kids to [be back in school.]
681. R: [Yeah]
682. W: (1) So (. that that is probably part of his success story

Reflection
I wondered about the statement that some parents ‘don’t engage very well’. It seemed that Miss Williams perhaps felt that this was beyond the school’s control. I wondered if staff had an awareness of the reasons why parents may find it hard to engage, and what schools can do to foster this relationship. Again I felt that Miss Williams often presented a very ‘knowing’ stance, which was based on her own perceptions rather than truly having an insight through Owen and parent voice.

‘It was like I’ve got to make up for what I’ve done’ (line 948)
This section explores Miss Williams’ thoughts regarding the reasons behind Owen’s behaviours.

Miss Williams refers to Owen’s feelings around the ‘incident’ that led to the SWAP:

232. W: When I talked through the incident what had happened he cried. (. He sat there and he cried. (. And he he (. he clearly (. regretted it.
618. W: [And] (. hopefully it it will just mean that there’s not another serious that that (. everything that’s happened he clearly found the whole thing [traumatic.]
622. W: he was so upset. (. He was so upset and he wanted he was trying to
justify to [me everything that this boy]
623. R: [Ok]
624. W: had done to him [that made him]
625. R: [yeah yeah yeah]
626. W: (. lose his temper. (. Erm (1)
Miss Williams clearly empathises with Owen and recognises the difficulties that he has faced. She speaks of the fact that he ‘wants to be liked’:

289. W: (1) From the minute he walked through the door he just really likes to be liked.
290. R: mm
291. W: And he really wanted to do well here.
299. W: he was so he was overly polite [with staff.]
300. W: So he hi miss hi miss (. ) erm or we’d open a door for him oh thank you thank you thank you he was a and he just wanted to be liked.
307. W: and it’s just that I think just just (. ) wanting a bit of attention
308. R: Yes
309. W: wanting to be liked. I don’t I don’t see him as much now cos I think he gets that from his friends.

She goes on to refer to him wanting to ‘impress’ staff:

594. W: wants your attention it’s quite sweet. (1) Erm (. ) I just hope that there’s not another (. ) serious incident [cos]
640. W: Erm (2) but he he just loved to impress her
644. W: and he’d be beaming [with pride stood behind her]

I then asked her what she felt was behind those behaviours:

948. W: I think cos he knew that we both knew (. ) it was like I’ve got to make up for what I’ve done.
949. R: Mm hmm (1) yeah. (1) That makes sense.
950. W: Yeah. (. ) Sad that isn’t it ((laughs)).

Reflection

Whilst it was clear that Owen was indeed getting lots of positive feedback in school, like Miss Williams I again felt that it was sad that Owen had been left feeling that he had to ‘prove’ himself in such a way. In her busy school role, I wondered whether Miss Williams had had much opportunity to reflect on this, and the reasons behind his behaviours. However, I felt that the narrative approach to interview allowed her some valuable reflection time. I wondered whether Miss Williams’s ‘laughter’ here perhaps represents what is not said, such as the fact that she feels that she can’t do anything about these feelings that Owen or other pupils may experience. I wonder if it represented a resignation to the situation in schools, whereby such feelings are inevitable.
Miss Williams refers to a 'blip' whereby Owen thought he was in trouble, and the upset that this caused him:

910. W: he had to have a bit of a telling off. (1) Well (.) he was distraught. (.) He was absolutely distraught. (.) It was it he didn’t even get to the point where he got a detention. (1) But he’d gone home and he’d he was that upset about it that mum had to bring him back into school.

916. W: And I (.) his (.) I think his thought process probably would have been (.) I’ve let people down. (.) Erm and (.) and this goes back to if they’ve (.) if (1) you know he (.) he had (.) that serious incident at (.) that school and I think he just felt like he’d let ev- (.) I think it brings back those feelings [so]

917. R: [Yeah]

918. W: (1) So (.) I mean I did some restorative work with him and the teacher and that worked really well.

924. W: but yeah it’s (.) because we’ve been so positive [he didn’t]

925. R: [Yeah]

926. W: he didn’t want any negative.

**Reflection**

Again Miss Williams seems to show understanding and empathy regarding Owen’s feelings, and how clearly desperate he is to ‘do well’ and ‘not let people down’. I wondered how the process had affected his resilience. I reflected on the importance of ensuring that young people know that we are not perfect and all make mistakes. Miss Williams did however seem to have some understanding of what was needed to repair the situation in terms of ‘restorative work’. What is perhaps unsaid here is that whilst Miss Williams speaks of Owen not wanting any negative, I also had a sense that her opinion would also reflect that of the school, whereby ‘negative’ or ‘behavioural incidents’ are indeed discouraged and frowned upon.

*I think he has got some social emotional issues’ (line 263)*

This section presents Miss William’s thoughts around Owen’s possible SEMH needs, as well as her perception of the needs of other FAP pupils.

Throughout her narrative, Miss Williams speaks of her understanding of the ‘issues’ that many children bring (including Owen), who have been through FAP:

44. W: And it’s really hard cos a lot of the time you know that they’re coming with issues

45. R: Yeah

46. W: (.) and you know that they might bring your school some issues.
They come off the role of the school that they were at and they come on your school role. (.) Erm (1) and (1) it’s a toughie because (1) you can imagine some of the the issues that some of those children bring [to some schools.]

Miss Williams refers to her interpretation of what she feels is behind Owen’s difficulties:

W: (2) Erm (4) I think it’s I think he has got some (.) social emotional issues.
R: mm
W: I think (1) I think he he seeks to be liked
R: Right
W: er quite a lot.
R: Ok
W: And I think if (.) I think maybe (.) if he’s (.) if he felt (1) like he’s left been left out or something [I mean]
R: [yeah]
W: the the details of the incident but (.) erm (1) I think it’s (.) probably then (..) got to the point where (. .) his anger’s got (. .) got the best of him.

She refers to the fact that she doesn’t know what can be done to prevent another ‘incident’:

wants your attention it’s quite sweet. (1) Erm (.) I just hope that there’s not another (.) serious incident [cos]
R: [Mm hmm]
W: (.) his behaviour his behaviour will stay OK now [he’s fine.]
R: [Yeah.]
W: (.) Erm and he knows what our expectations [are]
W: (1) I’m just hoping (.) and I don’t really know if there’s like an intervention that we can put in place [to prevent that]
W: erm (1) I mean we do have things like er the targeted youth service who do (.) things like anger management [and stuff like that.]
611. R: [Yeah (.) yeah]
612. W: But he doesn't (.) come across [angry.]

She feels that he has settled in very well, therefore ‘interventions’ are not needed:

1002. W: that was certainly the first time I'd seen her so we'd not had to (.) like (1) put anything any interventions in place
1003. R: Mm hmm
1004. W: we (1) they just seem to have (.) coped with his move well and then he's settled in really well [so]
586. W: But other than that we've not really had to have much (1) much contact with them cos his placement here’s been [so successful.]

Reflection

Although Miss Williams does refer to some ‘social and emotional issues’, I felt there was perhaps a lack of understanding regarding how that may present in children and young people, and that it is not necessarily only those who display ‘disruptive behaviour’ in need of support. Her statement ‘I hope there’s not another serious incident…he knows what our expectations are now’ perhaps further reflects a perception that responsibility lies with Owen. Again, this further reflects her belief that school holds power and position over pupils. I also wondered if certain assumptions were being made regarding parent views that he was ‘doing well’, since I knew that his mum did not necessarily hold the same viewpoint.

Miss Williams goes on to speak of the fact that ‘being positive’ is not always enough for children with ‘behavioural difficulties’:

882. W: erm (.) we’ve we’ve had kids who have who have come through that system and it's (.) you can be as positive as as you like
883. R: Mm
884. W: the the behaviour won’t (.) won’t change. (.) Erm sometimes a mainstream provision isn't right for that child

She speaks of the fact that after six weeks of a ‘swap’, CYP behaviour often returns to ‘how it was’:

562. W: and they've been successful for the 6 weeks (.) and then I've met like the vice principal like maybe two or three months after that and they've gone (.) Oh my god ((laughs))
566. W: [Can't believe they behaved that six weeks as soon as they were on roll [and they started misbehaving so.]
She refers to the fact that she hopes going through FAP is a ‘lesson learned’:

626 W: (...) I know sometimes you like to hope that part of the (1) the swap system and the FAP system is that it it’s a lesson learned [and then]

627. R: [Yeah]

628. W: again you do have your fresh start.

1156. W: They’re our kids you know. (1) Erm the the (1) the best thing is if they (.). they go away they learn a a lesson (.) and (.) and we’ve had we’ve had many kids do that (.). where they’ve come back and

She speaks of ‘naughty children’:

1146. W: you’d think like (1) that (.). cos naughty children (.). often find (.). other naughty children ((laughs)) (.). but (.). erm (2) yeah they (.). they tend to want to come back.

868. W: Erm (.). and brought on themselves (.). you know if it’s (.). a result of poor behaviour.

Reflection

Although Miss Williams is empathetic towards children with difficult backgrounds and who may go through FAP, again there seems to be a lack of understanding around the possible reasons for their behaviour. It seems that she feels there isn’t always much schools can do to change this, and that children can be ‘lost causes’. I also got the sense that Miss Williams perhaps felt that school should not always hold this responsibility, or that they can’t due to not having adequate resources. Interestingly, Miss Williams also refers to the ‘purpose’ of a school SWAP, whereby children can ‘learn a lesson’. Again, this perhaps reflects the educational climate, whereby a focus on ‘league tables’ and ‘attainment’ leads to children being branded ‘naughty’ due to them being a risk to the school’s reputation. Again such statements reinforce the position of power that Miss Williams feels school holds in the lives of children and families.

‘The way SWAPP was done in XLocal Authority was one of the worst I’d seen’ (line 385)

This section presents Miss William’s views on the FAP systems within the local authority.

Miss Williams speaks of the FAP systems in place within the local authority. She refers to the fact that the ‘SWAPP’ system (known as a managed move in other areas) has ‘failed’:
Miss Williams speaks of the difficulties that were faced in the ‘SWAPP’ process within the LA (see appendix 13, lines 383-345, 478-488). Reference is made to the fact that no one was monitoring it, that children were ‘set up to fail’ and that it was perhaps used by schools to say it was an ‘intervention’ before then ‘justifying’ a permanent exclusion. She speaks of a new ‘SWAPP’ system that is now set up as a ‘private’ arrangement between schools. She speaks of children sometimes ‘wanting to come back’, and that it can serve as ‘respite’ for schools (see appendix 13, lines 1116-1134, 1078-1082)

Miss Williams speaks of difficulties with the FAP process generally (which Owen came through), as compared to the ‘SWAPP’ panel:

466. W: we considered the child’s need maybe more than what they do (.) at Fair Access.
467. R: Right.
468. W: Because (1) I think the heads discuss them there and sometimes (.) the head’s don’t always (.) know (.)
469. R: Yeah.
474. W: erm (.) they don’t always know the ins and outs of the [family life]
475. R: [mm hmm]
476. W: and what’s (.) in the child’s best interests so (.)

Miss Williams speaks of the difficulties that schools face with the current FAP processes, and why this may lead to a permanent exclusion:

W: it’s a bit of a frustration like at the moment they won’t even erm consider a child through Fair Access if they’ve not had an Ed Psych [assessment.]
769. W: we put a case together and they’re just knocked it back and said(.) he’d have to have [see an Ed Psych.]

764 R: [Right Ok.]

765 W: I mean he won’t benefit anything(.) [from it.]

766 R: [Yes] yeah yeah yeah yeah.

767 W: (.) And it’s(.) a bit of a pointless exercise.

1048. W: it’s a bit like this at the moment where(.) erm(1) it’s quite difficult to get a(.) child placed at another school(.) then(.) the the(.) the referring school then(.) feels like they’ve got nowhere to go so a permanent exclusion has to be [issued]

Reflection
I felt that Miss Williams was quite honest with me in terms of her perception of the ‘failure’ of the FAP systems. However I did feel that she perhaps held back on her opinions, possibly due to her perception of my role. For example what is perhaps unsaid are her further opinions around children ‘going on roll’ and the ‘complications’ that this would cause. I wondered if she felt that this would cause complications due to school then having full responsibility for children, and that this could then affect the school’s data and performance targets. What is also perhaps unsaid are the reasons why she feels that EP involvement would be ‘pointless’, in order to support the student at risk of exclusion. I wondered if this reflected a poor understanding of the role, and her lack of knowledge regarding the potential value in such situations.

Miss Williams refers to the fact that new FAP systems are coming into place, and her hopes for success:

1052. W: [Yeah] (.) cos there’s now an early intervention panel and things like that so(.) fingers crossed.

1064. W: But I’m just hoping it’s(.) gonna be a better system.

1066. W: I think(.) it’s making sure that at that early intervention [level that everything’s been done.]

1067. R: [Oh ok (1) ok]

1068. W: That everything (1) that could possibly(.) be done for a child at their current [school has]

Reflection
This section reveals many of the tensions that seem to be apparent within the Fair Access Protocols and systems within the Local Authority. Again I feel that it reflects the conflict between ‘inclusion’ and ‘attainment’. Whilst it appears that FAP processes are trying to be more inclusive, schools are perhaps not equipped or prepared to meet these needs, in light of other agendas.
Summary

This chapter presents my analyses of individual narratives, where consideration is given to how participants make sense of their experiences in relation to research questions. The next chapter will focus on how the narratives relate to one another, again with links to literature.
Chapter 5: Discussion

Overview

The previous chapter presented my interpretation of individual narratives, in relation to my research questions. It is important to note that a vast amount of rich information was generated through the narratives, and my discussions could therefore take a variety of directions. Due to word limits, I will now reflect on what I consider to be the most salient and powerful aspects of these individual narratives, in relation to each other and in relation to the existing literature base, again with regards to my research questions (see page 22).

I will reflect on how findings might inform practice throughout, with particular reference to the role of the Educational Psychologist (EP) (see appendix 14 for a summary of the EP role, and appendix 8 for a summary for the LA). Finally, I outline the strengths and limitations of this study, before suggesting possible directions for future research.

Introduction

This research set out to examine the perspectives of participants, in terms of what I would deem a ‘grey’ form of exclusion, known in the Local Authority as a ‘school swap’ through the ‘Fair Access Panel’. This is used as an ‘alternative’ to permanent exclusion. My interpretations of the individual narratives highlight the many overlapping and contradictory themes, ideas, emotions, thoughts and perspectives of the three participants, in relation to this process. In response to my research questions, how participants ‘make sense’ of the ‘school swap’ experience is multi-faceted and complex. I would suggest that issues of social justice, ethics and human rights need to be considered, alongside a consideration of what can be learned from the more positive outcomes. Such issues will form the foundation of my preceding discussions. As is cited by Billington (2006) we need to ensure that we ‘do not merely subscribe to the principles of ethical codes but work hard to resist becoming separated from matters of social justice, which…are the preserve of all human history’ (p. 96).

The Local Authority: Links to the wider systemic context

As has been discussed, current educational policy and practice in the UK often leads to the marginalization of those who do not ‘fit’ (e.g. Armstrong, 2018, Jull, 2008). However, exclusion is incompatible with the agendas of inclusion and the human rights of
children and young people (Bagley & Hallam, 2016). Hence, rises in disciplinary exclusion in England has led to several alternatives, including what is known as a ‘school swap’ in this specific LA.

The effects of this wider political context are evident throughout the narratives, and Miss Williams speaks of the direct effects on vulnerable CYP. She speaks of the ‘SWAPP’ system having failed (known as a ‘managed move’ in other authorities and different to Owen’s ‘swap’). She speaks of children being ‘set up to fail’ and schools using it as evidence of an ‘intervention’ before a permanent exclusion can then be justified. She refers to schools ‘opting out’ when changes to systems meant that students had to be put ‘on roll’, hence perhaps having greater responsibility for their education. She refers to her own intentions for sending CYP on a ‘swap’, including school receiving ‘respite’ and pupils ‘learning a lesson’. This is seemingly in contrast to her empathy and understanding regarding the needs of pupils who go through such a system. These factors emphasise that schools have multiple and competing agendas regarding why CYP may be ‘moved’ (e.g. Bagley & Hallam, 2016).

Miss Williams speaks of current issues within the ‘Fair Access’ protocols which relate to Owen’s case. It seems that staff on the panel do not always have a full understanding of CYP needs. The FAP panel has recently changed protocol in order to reflect the SEN Code of Practice. Hence, before schools can request a ‘swap’ (as in Owen’s case) ‘interventions’ and involvement from Educational Psychology should be evidenced. Whilst this sounds positive, where schools feel that they cannot provide such support, they are then often left with ‘no option’ but to permanently exclude. From my own experience on placement I know that this has led to an increased number of permanent exclusions in the LA over the last few months. Drawing on this research thesis as well as the FAP review (see page 7 for summary) I would suggest this is due to a variety of factors, including a lack of staff knowledge in meeting SEN needs as well as the needs of CYP at risk of exclusion. It includes a lack of knowledge regarding the SEN Code of Practice, and a lack of robust Assess-Plan-Do-Review cycles. It also includes the wider, more system wide issues that affect education policies and practices in the UK. Power and Taylor (2018) highlight that:

‘the unintended consequences of government policies…put pressure on schools to be ‘inclusive’ without having adequate resources in place to support them’ (p.12)

Hence, the ‘competing demands of inclusion and the regular business of schooling’, leads to ‘the use of exclusionary practices that ‘fall short’ of an official exclusion’ (p.12).
As Miss Williams states, a ‘school swap’ (as in Owen’s case) is intended to be used when a student is ‘on the brink’ of a permanent exclusion, so as to give them a ‘fresh start’, and prevent the need for a permanent exclusion. In this way the principles are similar to what is known as a ‘managed move’ in other areas, however there is no ‘trial’ period and the student immediately goes ‘on roll’ at the receiving school. It seems to be a ‘grey’ process that just falls short of an official exclusion but is nevertheless exclusionary (e.g. Power & Taylor, 2018).

Several questions have arisen as a result of this research journey. First, to whose interests is the ‘swap’ serving? Perhaps any alternative to permanent exclusion is favourable for CYP and families. However, I would suggest that such a process results in undesirable factors not dissimilar to an official exclusion (to be discussed). I propose that the ‘swap system’ serves the interests of the LA, in reducing numbers of permanent exclusion. This is problematic since:

‘building targets around exclusions is only likely to mask various practices, make them less visible, and actually prevent more effectively targeted resources and structures being made available’ (Power & Taylor, 2018 p. 12).

I would propose that neither a permanent nor an ‘unofficial’ exclusion are the answer here, and that a different approach to meeting CYP needs (including Owen’s) is required. As is argued by the Centre for Social Justice (2011):

‘Permanent exclusion can be a legitimate sanction in certain cases. However, it is a very reactive and punitive process which can be extremely damaging for children and young people. It can be stigmatising for them and their school. Furthermore, it often fails to address the issues which have led to the child or young person’s exclusion in the first place.’

It is further stated:

‘There are also other means by which schools can arrange for pupils to have a genuine fresh start elsewhere, taking a forward looking and positive approach. However, these should only be considered where best efforts have already been made to support them to stay at their current school.’ (p. 131).

I will now discuss specific elements of my findings, in relation to the wider literature base.
The lead up to the ‘swap’

This research set out to examine the wider context of the swap, including ‘before’, ‘during’ and ‘after’. Being ‘on twilight’ is a significant aspect of Owen and Sarah’s narratives, which seemed to have a range of negative effects. Owen missed seemingly weeks of his education, being in school for only two hours per day. It was inconvenient for parents who had to try and ‘teach’ him at home, and his aunt paid for a maths tutor to compensate. My interpretations led me to believe that Owen felt guilt and isolation, and was left feeling unworthy of an education. It served to ‘punish’ rather than to ‘teach’ or ‘restore’. Previous research on the effects of permanent exclusion reports similar difficulties (e.g. Rendall & Stuart, 2005). Neither Sarah nor Owen appeared to fully understand what this process was. It seems that this was a form of ‘internal exclusion’ which lasted for many weeks. With regards to such ‘seclusion’ and ‘isolation’ rooms, the DfE (2016) states schools ‘must act reasonably...when using such rooms’ and that time spent there should be ‘used as constructively as possible’ (p.12). The Centre for Social Justice (2011) also speaks of concerning practice in such ‘internal exclusion’ areas, which are often used as ‘holding bays’ to ‘contain pupils with challenging behaviour’ (p. 139). Indeed, it appeared that this served as a ‘holding bay’ for Owen whilst he waited for his ‘swap’. It is proposed that the quality of such provision can vary considerably, whereby pupils are not given opportunity to improve or understand their behaviour (The Centre for Social Justice, 2011). It is further highlighted that:

‘These provisions are strategies that are aimed at reducing the number of exclusions reported by schools…Even though reducing exclusions is important for pupils, families and schools, it should be done through increasing the breadth and quality of the educational provision, not by grouping the most vulnerable, unwanted kids…in the worst area of the school.’ (p.139)

Owen went for seemingly weeks receiving this limited provision (October until possibly mid-January), which does not appear to be in line with the 2016 DfE guidance stating that ‘isolation rooms’ should be used ‘reasonably’ and ‘constructively’. It is unclear whether this was recorded as a formal, ‘fixed term’ exclusion for Owen. The Centre for Social Justice (2011) speaks of ‘illegal exclusion’, whereby the ‘absence’ is not recorded officially and so does not affect the school’s targets. It can include a ‘part time timetable’ which was indeed the case for Owen. Whilst not officially recorded, these pupils are given the same experience as a fixed-term exclusion (Barnados, 2010, as cited by the Centre for Social Justice, 2011). The DfE (2017) cites:
Informal or unofficial exclusions, such as sending a pupil home ‘to cool off’, are unlawful, regardless of whether they occur with the agreement of parents or carers. Any exclusion of a pupil, even for short periods of time, must be formally recorded.’ (p.10).

What’s more, if Owen had received an ‘official’ exclusion, the following statutory guidelines would apply:

‘For a fixed-period exclusion of more than five school days, the governing board (or local authority in relation to a pupil excluded from a PRU) must arrange suitable full-time education for any pupil of compulsory school age. This provision must begin no later than the sixth school day of the exclusion.’ (DfE, 2017, p. 16).

Owen’s provision of ‘two hours per day’ with sporadic worksheets given to him for a number of weeks does not appear to meet this criteria. It seems that he was denied the education that was entitled to during this time. This added to his feelings of frustration and shame, highlighted in the previous chapter.

**Behaviour as a communication**

Throughout her narrative, Sarah repeatedly reinforces the need for staff to recognise the effects of Owen’s difficult home life on his behavior. This includes growing up with domestic violence, living between two parents, feeling ‘let down’ by his dad and experiences of ‘bullying’ throughout school. She emphasises that whilst Owen needs to know his behavior is not acceptable, he also needs the opportunity to learn from this and for underlying needs to be met.

Disruptive behavior can be very concerning in terms of impact upon pupils, parents, staff and families. Annually, disruptive behavior accounts for 38 days of lost teaching time (OFSTED, 2014). Schools have to meet targets and manage behavior, and those staff members under pressure are ‘less likely to have the time and patience to establish positive relationships with challenging pupils, or develop strength-based approaches’ (Roffey, 2016, p. 38). Armstrong (2018) speaks of the ‘manage and discipline’ model that is embedded within the UK education system. It is highlighted that the profound and significant implications of developmental psychology are often disregarded by educational policy. Rather, the ‘manage and discipline’ approach to the conduct of CYP in schools is ‘often intellectually muddled and un-informed about child and adolescent behavior and is often reinforced by ill-considered public policy’ (Armstrong, 2013, p. 13). It is suggested that policy making in England ‘seems to be responsive to periodic moral panics about

Through developmental psychology, the behavior of CYP is understood to be shaped by a dynamic process, involving daily interactions with those significant individuals (e.g. parents, peers, teachers, siblings) (Armstrong, 2018). The process of behavioural change is highlighted (Paterson et al., 2016), with school being recognised as a key shaping influence and ‘major contributor to children’s social, emotional and behavioural development’ (Armstrong, 2018, p. 998). It is proposed that a radical cultural shift is needed, so that there is better alignment between evidence based research in developmental psychology, and the policies and practices in schools (Armstrong, 2018). Integral to this is the vital importance of ‘tackling factors which underpin observed behavior by students’ (Armstrong, 2018, p. 1004).

Law and Woods (2019) highlight the vital role of EPs in problem solving and consulting with schools, in order to understand the factors underlying behaviours. Bronfenbrenner’s ecological model is suggested as being a useful framework, whereby consideration should be given to the relationships with peers, parents and the school environment (Hong & Espelage, 2012). As is emphasised by Owen’s mum Sarah, parenting styles and the relationship between CYP and parents is highly influential in shaping behavior (Smack, Kushner & Tackett, 2015, cited by Gouveia, Leal and Cardoso, 2019). Positive peer and staff relationships are widely known to be linked to wellbeing, resilience and resulting positive behaviours (Gouveia, Leal and Cardoso, 2019, p. 68). Owen himself highlights that his aggressive behavior during the ‘incident’ was prompted by a desire to be ‘popular’.

Although Miss Williams briefly reflects that Owen may have some ‘social and emotional needs’, there seems to be a lack of knowledge regarding how best to support these, as well as those of other children who come through the ‘swap’ system. Roffey (2015) speaks of those children with SEMH needs who may ‘fly under the radar’ if their behavior is not seen to be ‘challenging’. This appears to be the case for Owen, who is generally ‘well behaved’, bright, popular and sociable. Miss Williams feels that he is a ‘success story’ who does not need ‘any interventions’. Her reference to ‘interventions’ is perhaps indicative of notions of a ‘quick fix’ rather than for allowing space for reflection and curiosity (Frankham & Kerr, 2009). Furthermore, as mentioned earlier, Kearney, Williams and Doherty (2016) highlight that a long term approach is needed to break cycles of poor outcomes and complex problems that are often present in the lives of CYP and families.
Armstrong (2018) speaks of the fact that believing a ‘solution’ can be arrived at, in order to ‘tackle the wicked problem of conduct in schools’ is ‘deeply inconsistent with evidence-based interactionist models about human behavior within developmental psychology’ (Armstrong, 2018, p. 1005).

Miss Williams regularly refers to pupils needing a ‘fresh start’. However, I would propose that an opportunity to ‘make sense’ of what has happened is needed for such youngsters. The notion of a ‘fresh start’ implies a within-child deficit, and downplays the vital role of the environment and relationships, which underpin behavior (e.g. Frankham and Kerr, 2009, Jull, 2008). Razer, Friedman and Warshofsky (2013) further highlight the effects of such ‘blame’ being placed on individuals, leading to the reinforcement of negative cycles. As Bagley and Hallam (2016) found, a ‘fresh start’ helped young people to look towards their future in a positive way, however this was not sufficient on its own. Alongside this, CYP stressed the importance of schools responding creatively and flexibly to individual need, as well as focused support during transition, integration and in the long term. Although Miss Williams speaks of personalised ‘pastoral support plans’, these seem to be focused around targets such as ‘not picking up behavior points’ which again perhaps infers a within-child deficit.

Miss Williams highlights that for some students, this notion of a ‘fresh start’, as well as an emphasis on ‘being positive’ ‘doesn’t always work’. She further reflects that for some students, ‘mainstream’ may not be the answer. Razer, Friedman and Warshofsky (2013) speak of the ‘helplessness frame’ whereby staff view pupils as ‘lost causes’. This then maintains the cycle due to a lack of action. Goodall (2018) further suggests that a ‘one size fits all’ approach to supporting SEMH needs is not effective. Rather, an understanding of individual difference is highlighted, so that support can be tailored. Schools need the advice and support of wider professionals (particularly EPs) in order to implement such evidence-informed practice. As Hamilton and Morgan (2018) highlight, ‘professionals need to be allocated the time and autonomy to deliver appropriate teaching and behavioural support’ (p. 89). This includes a focus on promoting protective factors and building resilience, through ‘whole school, whole child’ approaches (Roffey, 2016, p. 37), with a strong focus on ‘connection, community, positive relationships, high expectations and social and emotional learning’ (Roffey, 2015, p. 20). Such positive factors within Owen’s new school are discussed below.
Despite the SEN Code of Practice (2015) emphasizing the participation of CYP in matters that affect them, research suggests that this is often not the case (Kimber, 2014). Furthermore, since legislation does not define what ‘participation’ is, this can result in ‘superficial participation’ (Hawkins & Soni, 2018, p.36). Greig, Hobbs and Roffey (2014) highlight that although adults may want to do what is best for children, they may do so ‘without appropriate, timely or effective consultation with the young person themselves’ (p. 6). Furthermore, Young-Bruehl (2012) cited by Hawkins and Soni (2018) speaks of ‘childism’ whereby the discourse of childhood, and the positioning of children as ‘subordinate’ is used to justify the denial of such rights.

It is widely acknowledged that active participation in decision making is not only beneficial for CYP themselves, but also for the reform of the school as an organization, since CYP have much to offer (Ruddock, 2007, cited by Greig, Hobbs and Roffey, 2014). A sense of participation is essential for feelings of connectedness and belonging, which in turn enhances social and academic motivation and resilience (Greig, Hobbs and Roffey, 2014). Hamilton and Morgan (2018) highlight that students having opportunities to discuss hopes, dreams and progress serves to foster a sense of motivation and belongingness, as well as helping CYP to engage with ‘real life issues’ (Mainwaring, 2014, p. 102.) It is suggested that in order to foster a sense of school connectedness, children and young people need:

‘structured, on-going opportunities that genuinely seek to facilitate their confident empowerment in the construction of a supportive school climate, the process of their own learning and their personal growth and development.’ (Greig, Hobbs & Roffey, 2014, p. 6).

Kimber (2014) highlights:

‘Involving young people within discussions about changing educational placements might… allow them to view themselves as agents of change within their own education.’ (p. 30)

Owen and Sarah indicate that Owen was asked ‘which school’ he wanted to ‘swap’ to, which appeared to be the extent of his involvement. This therefore reflects a somewhat ‘tokenistic’ involvement (e.g. Hawkins & Soni, 2018). Kimber (2014) emphasises that a lack of involvement in the processes of ‘exclusion’, ‘reintegration’ and ‘transition’ can lead to ‘feelings of anxiety, helplessness and a loss of control’ (Kimber, 2014, p. 30). My interpretation of Owen’s narrative demonstrates that such feelings were indeed present during his ‘swap’ process. The language used by all participants further highlights that the ‘swap’ was not a joint decision, much like the process of a permanent exclusion. However,
Owen’s involvement in ‘student voice’ at his new school is a positive factor highlighted by Miss Williams, whereby he is able to get involved in some decision making processes.

EPs have an important role in supporting schools and systems to ensure that CYP are involved meaningfully in the decisions that affect them (e.g. Kimber, 2014, Hawkins & Soni, 2018). EPs promote the voice of the child through various different methods, including direct work, work with small groups, consultation with the adults around them, as well as systemic and organisational advice (Gersch, Lipscomb & Potton, 2017). Several useful frameworks exist, which ‘construe listening to CYP as taking place along a continuum… from ‘low’ to ‘high’… such that one can listen ‘a little’ or ‘a lot’ (Gersch, Lipscomb & Potton, 2017). It is proposed that such models need to consider the ‘contextual variables that can influence participation, such as the needs of the child and organisational barriers to participation’ (p.40).

Kimber (2014) further highlights that EPs are best place to support schools in developing person-centred planning strategies, ‘which involve a young person contributing directly to personalised targets and having an opportunity to clearly voice and record their wishes’ (p. 30). It seems that Owen has not had the opportunity to set and monitor his own targets in his new school, with ‘targets’ such as ‘not picking up behavior points’ being set by school alone. Flitcroft and Kelly (2016) highlight the importance of students being able to monitor their progress after a ‘move’ alongside supportive staff members. It is highlighted that ‘really enabling their participation is highly complex’ (Greig, Hobbs & Roffey, 2014, p. 9). It is proposed that cultural, societal and practical issues give rise to this complexity, some of which are discussed above, including the idea of ‘childism’ (e.g. Billington & Williams, 2017). Hence, as EPs we often have to ‘empower ourselves by re-philosophising our own restricted, entrenched assumptions and practices’ (p. 9). However, it is proposed that the profession is ‘at last re-entering, with fresh insights, knowledge and tools’ (p. 9) with regards to listening to young people. In order to facilitate the expression of voice, both CYP and the adults around them ‘need training and experience to develop their skills’ so that they can listen in an authentic and meaningful manner. A cultural change is required in order develop their active involvement, which is described as a ‘process not an event’ (Greig, Hobbs and Roffey, 2014, p.10).

**Owen: Shame, isolation and protective factors**
For Owen, the narratives highlight that school is a place where he can feel belonging and a sense of achievement. This is particularly heightened due to his difficult home life and background. As Roffey (2016) highlights:

‘for some children school may be the only place where people authentically care about them, where there is consistency and stability and high expectations are the norm’ (p. 39).

However, Owen’s ‘voice’, sense of ‘belonging’ and ‘connectedness’ appear to have been lost as a result of his time on ‘twilight’, as well as his ultimate ‘unofficial exclusion’, whereby he seemed to feel isolated and ‘silenced’ by staff. This ‘punishment’ appeared to lead him to feel shame and guilt, expressed at times as anger in his narrative. Tangney et al. (2013), highlight that shame is a ‘painful, disruptive emotion that often arises when individuals recognise their own negative attributes or unwanted behaviours, especially when these are observed by others’ (cited by Cook, Wildschut and Thomaes, 2017, p. 120). Shame can occur when individuals fall short of expectations (Cook, Wildshut & Thomaes, 2017) and can lead to feelings of ‘inferiority, exposure and reductions in self-worth’ (Gilbert, 1997, 1998a, 1998b, Mills, 2005, cited by Cook, Wildschut and Thomaes, 2017). Shame has been found to be associated with a range of diverse consequences, including depression, anxiety, aggression, impaired working memory amongst others (Cavalera & Pepe, 2014, Mills, 2005, Reimer, 1996, Thomaes et al., 2008, 2011, cited by Cook, Wildschut & Thomaes, 2017). I would argue that Owen has not been able to make sense of or validate these emotions. As a result of these feelings, Owen is now desperate to ‘prove’ himself in his new setting, which is recognised by all participants. He is afraid that it may happen again. Research on the effects of permanent exclusion reflects similar findings, whereby pupils feel unhappy, lonely, isolated, stigmatized and cut off from friends (e.g. Daniels, 2011, Rendall & Stuart, 2005). I would propose that the ‘swap’ process mirrors what Vandekinderen et al. (2018) describe as ‘social exclusion in education’ which is a ‘multi-layered concept’, covering:

‘the physical absence of socially vulnerable young people in education…the exclusion from meaning-making processes in education… [and/or] the lack of a connection with education.’ (p. 1).

Owen’s motivation, determination and resilience seem to have acted as protective factors throughout the ‘swap’ process, as well as support from school staff and parents. These factors are highlighted by all participants. Daniels (2011) found that supportive staff and parent networks help to aid the resilience of pupils permanently excluded. To some extent, Owen also appears to show the ability for self-reflection. This is evident in his comments about being ‘a smart boy who has made a stupid mistake’. Such qualities are
highlighted by Hamilton and Morgan (2018) as being essential for successful transition. Furthermore, Owen's motivation and desire to 'prove himself' shows that he sees himself as an 'agent of change' within his education, which Kimber (2014) highlights as being pivotal to success (p. 30). Cook, Wildschut and Thomaes (2017) speak of the fact that CYP who endorse a 'growth mind set' experience less 'shame' and more 'pride'. Furthermore, this view of ability as 'incremental' rather than 'fixed' leads to CYP persisting when confronted with setbacks. However, for those children who do not hold such qualities, the 'swap' experience may be somewhat more damaging, further emphasising the 'double whammy effect' that Roffey (2016) highlights.

**Identified good practice**

Despite various limitations of the 'swap' process being revealed, the narratives highlight some 'protective' factors in Owen’s new school. These reflect good practice within existing literature regarding supporting CYP who are 'at risk' of exclusion. For example, Miss Williams speaks of the school promoting 'high expectations' with regards to behavior, as well as clear and consistent systems and structures. Owen himself speaks highly of this organised and predictable environment. Gouveia, Leal and Cardoso (2019) highlight the role of the school climate in impacting upon the attitudes and behaviours of pupils. This includes factors such as the organizational structure of the school, strong leadership, high quality teaching and learning, interpersonal relationships and school values (Cohen, 2009, cited by Gouveia, Leal and Cardoso, 2019). Roffey (2015) highlights the value of high expectations, whereby clear boundaries are provided. This has positive implications for resilience, whereby CYP learn to be resourceful in the face of challenges.

Both Owen and Miss Williams praise the quality of teaching in school. Hamilton and Morgan (2018) stress the value of staff in creating a positive learning environment, where failure is seen as part of learning. Owen highlights this, in reflecting that teachers encourage him and support him to do his best, and develop his 'growth mind-set'. This helps students to have 'a more positive outlook towards failure' whereby they 'will often look for strategies that will aid their success in the future' (Hamilton & Morgan, 2018, p. 88). Bielby et al. (2012) highlight that such approaches create environments based on mutual respect, where students know that staff care about them. In turn this develops their resilience, motivation and sense of belonging.

Owen speaks of his enthusiasm for his new friends, who Miss Williams says he has quickly formed good relationships with. Fundamental to this appears to be Owen’s naturally sociable nature, whereby he is able to make friends quickly. This is identified as a key
aspect that impacts upon the successful transition of pupils between schools (Hamilton & Morgan, 2018). Miss Williams highlights the ‘buddy’ system which school set up to help students to settle into their new environment. She also speaks of Owen developing a positive and supportive relationship with a key teaching assistant, who helped him to ‘settle’ particularly during his first few weeks. She speaks of some ‘restorative’ work that she has done with Owen and one subject teacher, following a slight ‘behavioural blip’ in one of Owen’s lessons. Restorative approaches have a strong evidence base, in terms of providing students and staff with learning opportunities that shape positive social relationships, and develop conflict management skills (e.g. Short, Case & McKenzie, 2018).

As discussed, developing supportive relationships with both peers and adults is widely reported to foster a sense of belonging in school (e.g. Flitcroft & Kelly, 2016, Goodall, 2018, Gouveia, Leal & Cardoso, 2019), particularly for those children who may have more difficult home lives (e.g. Roffey, 2016). As Roffey (2015) highlights ‘the strongest factor in resilience is having someone in your life who thinks you are special and shows they care about you’ (p. 23). Hamilton and Morgan (2018) further state:

‘positive reinforcement and encouragement of young people by staff was pivotal in motivating students and developing their self-belief’ (p. 88).

Finally, although notions of a ‘fresh start’ have possible negative implications (such as placing blame), there do seem to be some positive effects as highlighted by both Miss Williams and Owen. It seems to have enabled an element of hope, as well as an alternative ‘narrative’ for Owen, whereby he has the opportunity anticipate a positive future. Flitcroft and Kelly (2016) highlight the importance of positive language from staff, which can foster a sense of belonging. Alongside this is Miss Williams’s apparent determination and desire to ensure the correct support for CYP who are at risk of exclusion. Much can be learned from this good practice, in terms of schools supporting vulnerable CYP.

**Power struggles and communication barriers**

In a review of the research to date on ‘managed moves’, Messeter and Soni (2018) speak of the stress that the process can have on families, often due to poor communication. I would suggest that this experience is mirrored by Sarah, who indicates that poor communication led to stress and uncertainty. It seems she did not fully understand the processes, including the ‘twilight’ and the ‘swap’ itself. Gazeley (2012) highlights that where parents are uninformed and lack knowledge about the details of
processes, ‘practices and judgements that fail to meet the expected standards often pass without scrutiny’ (p. 308). Sarah did not appear to be involved in discussions around Owen’s needs, and did not know why they were waiting such a long time for the ‘swap’. She highlights that communication between professionals was poor. According to Trotman, Tucker and Martyn (2015), high quality information sharing between provisions is essential, particularly at key transition points. Sarah appeared to feel powerless and exhausted in trying to act as an advocate for Owen. In a review of managed moves, there was often a high level of involvement required from parents. In order for them to feel involved and in control, they often had to adopt LA roles (Muir, 2013).

The importance of parental involvement in school life is well documented, in order to create positive and supportive environments (e.g. Gouveia, Leal & Cardoso, 2019) and to ensure educational achievement (Meldrum-Carter & Gus, 2015). However, it is recognised that ‘securing parental involvement is no easy task’ (Meldrum-Carter & Gus, 2015, p. 13). As is cited by Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015):

‘Even though school and home may have the same goal, that is, achieving the best for the child, they may have different motivations and pressures which affect the communicative process.’ (p. 15).

It is suggested that staff need to look more ‘deeply’ and ‘consider the message they are giving and whether the parent is ready to receive it’ (Meldrum-Carter & Gus, 2015, p. 18). A significant concern for Sarah and also for Miss Williams was in regards to the initial meeting, which led to Miss Williams insisting that parents ‘stop arguing’. As a result, Sarah reports that she was left feeling ‘mortified’. As is cited by Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015), ‘what you say and how you say it’ is very important, and ‘at the wrong time, giving advice…and teaching new behaviours might actually be counterproductive’ (p. 19). It seemed that Miss Williams perhaps lacked some awareness of the effects of such an interaction, as well as possible alternative ways of managing it.

Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015) further speak of ‘power imbalances’ whereby schools see their view as ‘correct’, with parents needing to ‘adjust accordingly’ (p. 19). It is suggested that both parties need a better awareness of this power dynamic, as well as a better understanding of what the other is thinking and feeling. Staff may feel under pressure to uphold the agenda of the school, leading to a somewhat ‘rigid’ or ‘inflexible’ response. This then serves to maintain the status quo, and parents can feel they have no voice (Attwood, 2007). Where parents feel ‘powerless’, this can then lead to them ‘opting out’, perhaps appearing ‘uncaring’ or ‘disengaged’ by professionals. It can also lead to feelings of anger, due to their desire to defend their child (Attwood, 2007). They can be
seen as ‘difficult’ by school staff (Roffey, 2004). Such ‘rigid’ or ‘inflexible’ responses from staff could be said to occur when Sarah showed them the ‘video’ of ‘the incident’. It seems that she wanted to work together, and wants them to understand that Owen is not ‘mad’ or ‘bad’, and that he needs to learn, to be accepted and included (Roffey, 2004). However, a focus on school agendas appears to have resulted in Sarah feeling isolated and with nowhere to turn.

Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015) speak of the need for staff to adopt a ‘let’s walk alongside each other’ approach rather than a ‘come to me’ approach (p. 18). Motivational interviewing (Miller & Rollnick, 1991) is suggested as a useful tool for staff to use with parents, to

‘enable staff to listen for any mismatch between their agenda and that of the parents, and enable them to have a strategy to remedy this; one which invokes change rather than creates barriers.’ (Meldrum-Carter & Gus, p. 19).

Meldrum-Carter and Gus (2015) further highlight that the goal of ‘partnership’ with parents is difficult to achieve due to such unequal balances of power. Rather, it is suggested that staff should aim for ‘collaboration’ (p. 13). Again, EPs are in an ideal position to support schools towards this goal.

**Reflections on the research process.**

Through this research journey, I have become more aware of the long history of children, young people and families being seen as a ‘problem’, leading to marginalization and social exclusion. As Billington (2000) states, there is a need for

‘professionals to be aware of their power as story-tellers and their need also to become historians who possess some understanding of social, economic and political processes in order that they might ‘ward off the psychologization of political problems’” (p. 117).

As is emphasised by Williams and Goodley (2017), there is a need to rethink ‘pedagogical practices’, and reshape ‘educational spaces’, whereby we bring ‘disability to the centre’, allowing the opportunity to ‘disrupt these normative ideals of childhood’ (p. 53). EPs have an important role in reflecting on their daily practices, and the extent to which differences are celebrated or problematized, in order to offer an ‘alternative vision for the future’ (Billington & Williams, 2017, p. 8).
The value of narrative approaches in raising marginalised voices and empowering individuals has influenced my daily practice greatly. Through narrative, a greater understanding of the ways in which individuals make sense of their reality can be reached (Tellis-James & Fox, 2016). As well as developing my understanding of participant experiences, the approach appeared to aid participants in reflecting on their own experiences, enabling them to make sense of ‘what has happened or what is happening’ to them and to others (Tellis-James & Fox, 2016, p. 327). I hope to continue to bring such elements of narrative practice into my daily work with CYP, families and professionals. Integral to this is reflecting on the complexity of the human experience, including a recognition of the complex relationship between words and meaning (e.g. Frankham and Kerr, 2009). As Craib (2000) suggests, life stories can conceal as well as reveal. Narrative allows individuals to ‘bring their pertinent issues to discussions rather than constraining their voices to our own topics’ (Warham, 2012). This research journey has emphasised the role and power of narrative in shaping and ‘re-storying’ identities, in paying attention to those stories that have ‘healing potential’ (White & Epst, 1990, p. ix). In this way, narrative presents a powerful possibility for both personal and societal change.

I have been able to consider relational challenges, particularly when acknowledgement is given to the ‘presence and impact of the researcher’ (Billington & Williams, 2017, p.9). I acknowledge that my role as a TEP within the LA may have influenced the narratives of participants. This has highlighted the importance of reflection and reflexivity in my daily practice. As Billington (2006) highlights, ‘the practitioner who is required to be an active and reflexive researcher at ease with the principles of critical thinking and evaluation of practice could begin to engage more creatively with children and young people’ (p. 14).

**Limitations and suggestions for future research**

This research presents one case study regarding a ‘school swap’ within one specific local authority. Where case studies are carried out in sufficient numbers, this can lead to knowledge and understanding about ‘general trends and the typicality of occurrences’ (Willig, 2008, p. 86). Furthermore, the expression of individual narratives develops and widens our understanding (Cefai & Cooper, 2009). Hence, this research contributes to our (limited) understanding of the effects of such practices, both for schools, families and young people. With the growing number of such ‘grey’ exclusions occurring in the UK, it is essential that research continues within this area.

**Limitations of the present case study include the limited perspectives drawn upon.** As stated, due to ethical considerations, with my research supervisor I decided not to...
interview Owen’s dad. I also decided to speak with Miss Williams, rather than the teaching assistant who knew Owen well, due to Miss Williams having specific knowledge about the FAP system. Stake (1978, 1994) refers to the fact that case studies are most useful where they incorporate multiple perspectives. Thomas (2017) also refers to the usefulness of case studies, whereby ‘a rich set’ of ‘multiple perspectives’ is gathered (p. 254, 258). Future research could consider including additional perspectives, so as to add to the richness of understanding regarding the case under inquiry.

Throughout this narrative research process, I sought to allow participants to become story tellers, facilitated by my listening and stance of genuine curiosity (e.g. Morgan, 2000). However, I recognise that I had the ultimate decisions about how the narratives would be edited and what would be included. Although narratives were co-constructed through the relational nature of the interviews, the analyses represent my own interpretations of participant stories. I decided not to share analyses with participants due to the sensitive nature of these interpretations. Future research could consider a more co-constructive approach to narrative research, whereby participants can truly own their stories. As Warham (2012) states: ‘By working with young people as co-researchers, we assume their competence and move away from a model of researcher as expert’ (p. 84).

Research should seek to further examine practices within academies, as literature here is extremely limited (Messeter & Soni, 2018). It is only through these revelations that we can come to understand and challenge practices that marginalise. Research should examine the longer term impacts for CYP and families, since it is possible that ‘difficulties may manifest over time’ (Messeter & Soni, 2018, p. 182).

Conclusions

This research thesis has presented the perspective of one young person, parent and staff member regarding their ‘school swap’ experience. I would argue that whilst such an approach ‘falls short’ of official ‘exclusion’, it is nevertheless exclusionary (Power & Taylor, 2018.) As a result, I argue that both Owen and Sarah were left feeling isolated, helpless and afraid it may happen again. Rather than being supported to learn from and make sense of ‘the incident’ which led to the swap, Owen was left feeling guilt and shame, often expressed as frustration and anger. ‘Within-child’ explanations appeared to place blame on Owen for his behaviour, rather than considering the complex interaction between him and wider systemic factors, including home life, upbringing and relational factors.

The swap process itself appeared to be stressful for both Owen and his family. A lack of communication between them and professionals seemed to be central to this.
Power hierarchies are very visible throughout, whereby Owen and Sarah appear to be very much silenced. Owen missed much of his education for a significant period of time, as a result of ‘internal exclusion’ during the lead up to the ‘swap’. This was inconvenient for his parents who had to provide additional education and childcare.

Positive factors at Owen’s new school reflect good practice within the literature base. These include opportunities to develop positive relationships with both peers and staff. Involvement in ‘student voice’ seems to be developing feelings of connectedness and belonging, resilience and motivation. High and consistent expectations serve to provide a sense of safety, security and motivation. The notion of a ‘fresh start’ helps to provide a positive outlook for Owen, however it also leaves him feeling accountable for his behavior and without opportunity to make sense of what has happened. As Frankham and Kerr (2009) highlight, moving forward requires a consideration of the past, whilst not letting it prescribe the future. I argue that a focus on such good practice should be universal, in order to support CYP to prevent a ‘move’ in the first place. As is highlighted by Billington (2000):

‘For we live in a culture in which children are removed from one school and placed elsewhere just because their differences are deemed unacceptable…I consider that such solutions are devised often in accordance with the needs of the government rather than necessarily what the child might choose for themselves, and thus constitute punitive acts of authority in which children’s differences are identified prior to the imposition upon them of a social exclusion. I suggest that the effects of such separations may be detrimental and long lasting’ (p. 2).

Alongside the recommendations for the local authority and implications for EP practice (see appendix 8 and 13), some practice implications would be suggested for both parents, children and school staff, should they find themselves in a ‘swap’ process or similar. For young people, I feel that having someone to talk to who has gone through the systems would be helpful, such as a buddy peer. Reassuring young people regarding the mixed emotions that they will be feeling will no doubt be helpful. This will come from having a key adult to speak to throughout the process, so that they can make sense of what is happening. Encouraging young people to talk to and open up to parents, siblings and friends will be a good support network for them, as well as possible independent services. Likewise for parents, it would no doubt be helpful to be put in touch with other parents who have gone through a similar process, in order to offer advice and support. It is important that parents are aware of support systems that are available, such as independent services including SENDIASS. Such services will help parents to understand their rights, and to feel
confident to express their worries and views. Parents should also be guided towards information so that they fully understand their rights in the process, including legislations around exclusions, as well as behavior and sanction frameworks and policies within school.

However, many things explored and revealed in this paper are beyond the control of parents and young people. It is the responsibility of the local authority and school staff to ensure that processes are fair and CYP and parents are fully involved throughout. It would be helpful for school staff to be aware of the following good practice recommendations. First, staff should understand the vital importance of gathering information regarding the young person's needs. This should involve speaking with the old school as well as the pupil themselves and parents. It will be important that transition is tailored based on these needs as well as the wishes of parents and young people. Factors that may be helpful include assigning key adults and buddy peers, particularly during the initial stages of the transition. Having regular reviews involving the parent and pupil, even if they are seemingly doing ‘well’ will be important. Whilst a focus on the positive will be important, staff should understand that pupils may likely benefit from some opportunity to make sense of the swap, which would likely have been traumatic for them (see appendix 8 and 14 for further recommendations).

Finally, this research thesis adds to the growing body of literature which demonstrates that current government educational agendas, including an emphasis on ‘league tables’ and ‘academic attainment’, are incompatible with the notion of ‘inclusion’. Such educational policy leads to the marginalization of children and families who do not ‘fit’ within this results-driven educational arena. This is leading to the growing emergence of ‘grey’ exclusionary practices, such as this process of a ‘school swap’. I would argue that these practices serve to reduce and ‘mask’ the rates of ‘official’ exclusion in schools, and fail to address the reasons which led to the ‘move’ in the first place. Educational professionals, including EPs, have an important task in challenging these societal processes. This thesis presents a way of working with CYP, families and professionals, to prevent those who are most vulnerable from being left behind.
References


Billington, T., & Williams, A. (2017). The national and international growth in qualitative research within the field of educational psychology. In J. Hardy & C. Hobbs. Using Qualitative research to hear the voice of children and young people (1-12). Leicester: The British Psychological Society.


Murphy, S. (2017). In the space between: Listening to young people who have encountered a managed move. (Unpublished doctoral thesis) Sheffield, UK: University of Sheffield.


Appendix 1: Narrative based interview prompts

Tell me about....
Tell me more about...
Can you remember a time when...
How did that feel...
What was that like for you?
Were there any other occasions...
How does ___ see you
Who else knows that about you
What would___ think about that
Did anyone else notice?
How can you tell....
Is that important to you
Is that something you normally feel
What has changed
What effect did that have?
What makes you think that?

Clarification

What do you mean by....
You said that....
What is that...?
Can you give an example....?

Exceptions

Who sees you differently
When was it better
When was it different
When have you not felt...
Appendix 2: Alternative methodologies

1. Phenomenological Methods

Many diverse strands of phenomenology exist, whereby each makes different assumptions about certain issues, such as the nature of being human and human action, as well as the role of language and interpretation (Willig, 2008). Willig (2008) states

‘Phenomenology is interested in the world as it is experienced by human beings within particular contexts and at particular times… the appearance of an object varies depending on the perceiver’s location and context, angle of perception and impartiality, and the perceiver’s mental orientation’ (p. 52).

Some approaches to phenomenology assume that it is possible for the researcher to suspend judgement, presuppositions, assumptions and interpretations in order to experience the phenomenon as it is experienced by the research participant (Willig, 2008). Conversely in the present study, I see the research process as very much a co-construction between myself and the participants (due to the relational nature of research), and that ‘bracketing’ all past knowledge is an impossible if not extremely challenging task (also see Watts, 2014). Interpretative phenomenological analysis is ‘concerned with examining experience, as far as possible…without being overly influenced by prior psychological theorizing or by personal proclivities of the researcher’ (Smith, 2017, p. 302). However, whilst IPA recognises the importance of the researcher’s perspective more than some of the other phenomenological approaches, ‘it does not actually tell us how to incorporate this insight into the research process an does not show us how the researcher’s own conceptions are implicated in a piece of analysis’ (Willig, 2008, p. 70).

Hence, it does not quite fit with my social constructionist positionality, since themes are said to ‘emerge and be discovered in a way that invokes grounded theory rather than social constructionism’ (Willig, 2008 p. 70). A further reason why IPA was rejected is due to the fact that it assumes the ‘representational validity of language’ and that ‘language provides participants with the necessary tools to capture that experience’ (Willig, 2008, p. 66). However, I would argue that rather than describing reality, language constructs it, therefore ‘language can never simply give expression to experience’ (Willig, 2008, p. 67).

Furthermore, it assumes that participants are able to communicate the richness of their experiences, which is difficult particularly for those with perhaps marginalised voices, who are not used to doing so (Willig, 2008). I hope that in this research journey I am able to provide a reflexive and reflective account on these issues.
2. Discursive Methods

Discursive methods were a further option for my study. Discursive psychology sees language as constituting knowledge (Seymour-Smith, 2017). Discursive methods are said to be social constructionist in their epistemological positioning, whereby versions of reality are ‘talked into being’ (Willig, 2008, p. 108). There are two approaches to the analysis of discourse, including discursive psychology and Foucauldian discourse analysis (FDA). Whilst the former is concerned primarily with how discursive resources are used to achieve interpersonal objectives in social interactions, FDA goes further in its claims about the relationships between language, human subjectivity, social and power relations (Willig, 2008). Limitations of such an approach for myself in the present research journey are detailed in literature. First is the question of the formation of personal identity, and whether discourse is all that is required here. For example the role of past experiences is unclear, which is something that I hope to reflect upon in my tentative interpretations. Furthermore, how individual differences in subject positions are accounted for is also unclear (Willig, 2008). Although discourse analysis would have produced an interesting and different focus to my research, I felt that narrative analysis would afford better opportunities to answer my research questions and look beyond language as a ‘tool’ to ‘manage interactions and pursue objectives’ (Willig, 2008, p. 107). Rather, I hope to focus on the ‘understanding, interpretation and explication of meaning’ (Watts, 2014, p.4).
Appendix 3: Ethical Approval letter

The University of Sheffield

Downloaded: 03/05/2019
Approved: 07/05/2018

Helen Rowe
Registration number: 140102383
School of Education
Programme: Doctor of Educational and Child Psychology

Dear Helen

PROJECT TITLE: The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a School SWAP
APPLICATION: Reference Number 018762

On behalf of the University ethics reviewers who reviewed your project, I am pleased to inform you that on 07/06/2018 the above-named project was approved on ethics grounds, on the basis that you will adhere to the following documentation that you submitted for ethics review:

- University research ethics application form 018762 (dated 31/05/2018).
- Participant Information sheet 1042798 version 2 (31/05/2018).
- Participant consent form 1042804 version 2 (31/05/2018).

If during the course of the project you need to deviate significantly from the above approved documentation please inform me since written approval will be required.

Yours sincerely

David Hyatt
Ethics Administrator
School of Education
Appendix 4: Information and consent sheets

a. Staff information sheet

Participant Information sheet: Staff

Research Project title: The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a ‘School SWAP’.

Dear ___________

My name is Helen Rowe and you are being invited to take part in my research project. Before you decide it is important for you to understand why the research is being done and what it will involve. Please take the time to read the following information carefully and discuss it with others if you wish. Please ask me if there is anything that is not clear or if you would like more information. Take time to decide whether or not you wish to take part. Thank you for reading this.

What is the purpose of the project?

The research project involves listening to the experiences of young people as well as their parent/carer and staff member who have been involved in their ‘school swap’. I believe that your views are important as they can help to improve support for young people. I hope that my research will help to inform what is helpful and what is not, what works and what does not, when a young person undergoes a ‘swap’ so that young people, their parents/carers and staff can be supported effectively.

Why have I been chosen?

You have been identified as a potential participant since you have been involved with a child who has undergone a ‘school swap’ in the last 12 months.

What will this involve?

If you decide to take part I would like to talk to you about your experiences in working with the child who has undergone a ‘school swap’. I would like to know how you felt at different times and what you felt worked, and what did not. As part of this we might make a visual image of the timeline of events to guide our discussion. I will probably meet you a couple of times, for around an hour each time over the next few weeks.

Do I have to take part?

Taking part in this research is entirely voluntary and if you decide you do not want to take part you do not have to do anything or give any reason. I hope that taking part in this research will be a positive experience for you. However I understand that some things may be upsetting or difficult for you to talk about. If you do decide to take part you can decide which experiences you do and do not want to talk about with me. You can also stop the
You can end the conversation or decide that you no longer want to take part in the research at any time and you do not have to give a reason.

What will happen to my information and will my taking part be confidential?

I would like to audio record our conversation so that I can write down what is said. As soon as I have written it down I will delete the recording. I will get your permission to include the information that you give me and it will only be included if you agree. If you would like me to show you the transcript of the conversation so that you can check the content and remove anything that you do not want to be included, we can arrange this. I will not include your or the child’s real name in the research and all other names of people and places will be changed. All the information that I collect about you and the child during the course of the research will be kept strictly confidential. You will not be able to be identified in any reports or publications.

Due to the nature of this research it is very likely that other researchers may find the data collected to be useful in answering future research questions. I will ask for your explicit consent for your data to be shared in this way and if you agree, I will ensure that the data collected about you is untraceable back to you before allowing others to use it.

The information that the other people give me about their experience in the ‘school swap’ (e.g. your child and a staff member) is also strictly confidential which means that no one will know what they say except me. This means you will not be able to know what they have said, and they will not know what you have said. It is important that you feel comfortable with this before you agree to take part.

Who has ethically reviewed the project?

This project has been ethically approved via the Education Department's ethics review procedure.

What if something goes wrong?

If you feel unhappy at any time during the project or if you have any complaints I hope that you will feel able to talk to me. You can also contact my supervisor Dr Tom Billington at the University of Sheffield (email: t.billington@sheffield.ac.uk, phone number 0114 222 8177) or or David Hyatt (Chair of Ethics at The University of Sheffield) d.hyatt@sheffield.ac.uk.

What happens next?

If you would like to take part in the study please sign the consent form and return it to me. If you do not want to take part you do not have to do anything and you do not have to say why.

Thank you for reading this letter. Please contact me (Helen Rowe) if you would like any more information (07922643905, hrowe1@sheffield.ac.uk).

You will be able to keep this information sheet for your own records as well as a copy of the signed consent form to keep if you wish to take part.
**Participant Information sheet: Parent**

**Research Project title: The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a ‘School SWAP’**.

Dear _______________

My name is Helen Rowe and you are being invited to take part in my research project. Before you decide it is important for you to understand why the research is being done and what it will involve. Please take the time to read the following information carefully and discuss it with others if you wish. Please ask me if there is anything that is not clear or if you would like more information. Take time to decide whether or not you wish to take part. Thank you for reading this.

**What is the purpose of the project?**

The research project involves listening to the experiences of young people as well as their parent/carer and staff member who have been involved in their ‘school swap’. I believe that your views are important as they can help to improve support for young people. I hope that my research will help to inform what is helpful and what is not, what works and what does not, when a young person undergoes a ‘swap’ so that young people, their parents/carers and staff can be supported effectively.

**Why have I been chosen?**

You have been identified as a potential participant since your child has undergone a ‘school swap’ in the last 12 months.

**What will this involve?**

If you decide to take part I would like to talk to you about your own and your child’s experiences of the ‘school swap’ that they went through. With your permission this will probably include a discussion around the time before and leading up to the swap, yours and your child’s experiences during the swap as well as after, and your hopes for your child’s future. I would like to know how you felt at different times and what you felt worked, and what did not. As part of this we might make a visual image of the timeline of events to guide our discussion. I will probably meet you a couple of times for around an hour each time over the next few weeks.

**Do I have to take part?**

Taking part in this research is entirely voluntary and if you decide you do not want to take part you do not have to do anything or give any reason. I hope that taking part in this research will be a positive experience for you. However I understand that some things may be upsetting for you to talk about. If you do decide to take part you can decide which experiences you do and do not want to talk about with me. You can also stop the conversation or decide that you no longer want to take part in the research at any time and you do not have to give a reason.
What will happen to my information and will my taking part be confidential?

I would like to audio record our conversation so that I can write down what is said. As soon as I have written it down I will delete the recording. I will get your permission to include the information that you give me and it will only be included if you agree. If you would like me to show you the transcript of the conversation so that you can check the content and remove anything that you do not want to be included, we can arrange this. I will not include yours or your child’s real name in the research and all other names of people and places will be changed. All the information that I collect about you during the course of the research will be kept strictly confidential. You will not be able to be identified in any reports or publications.

Due to the nature of this research it is very likely that other researchers may find the data collected to be useful in answering future research questions. I will ask for your explicit consent for you and your child’s data to be shared in this way and if you agree, I will ensure that the data collected about you is untraceable back to you before allowing others to use it.

The information that the other people give me about their experience in the ‘school swap’ (e.g. your child and a staff member) is also strictly confidential which means that no one will know what they say except me. This means you will not be able to know what they have said, and they will not know what you have said. It is important that you feel comfortable with this before you agree to take part.

Who has ethically reviewed the project?

This project has been ethically approved via the Education Department’s ethics review procedure.

What if something goes wrong?

If you feel unhappy at any time during the project or if you have any complaints I hope that you will feel able to talk to me. You can also contact my supervisor Dr Tom Billington at the University of Sheffield (email: t.billington@sheffield.ac.uk, phone number 0114 222 8177) or David Hyatt (Chair of Ethics at The University of Sheffield) d.hyatt@sheffield.ac.uk.

What happens next?

If you would like to take part in the study please sign the consent form and return it to me. If you do not want to take part you do not have to do anything and you do not have to say why.

Thank you for reading this letter. Please contact me (Helen Rowe) if you would like any more information (07922643905, hrowe1@sheffield.ac.uk).

You will be able to keep this information sheet for your own records as well as a copy of the signed consent form to keep if you wish to take part.
Participant Information sheet: young person

Dear __________

My name is Helen Rowe and I am training to become an Educational Psychologist at the University of Sheffield. I am writing to ask whether you would like to take part in my research project. Please read this information sheet with your parent or carer so that you can decide together whether you would like to take part.

What is the research project?

The research project involves listening to the experiences of young people as well as your parent/carer and a staff member who have been involved in your ‘school swap’. I believe that your views as well as their views are important as they can help to improve support for young people.

What will this involve?

If you decide to take part I would like to talk to you about experiences that have been important to you both in and out of school and your ideas for the future. This will also involve drawing a visual timeline of your experiences using pictures and words. I will probably meet you a couple of times for an hour each time over the next few weeks.

Do I have to take part?

I hope that taking part in this research will be a positive experience for you. However I understand that some things might be upsetting for you to talk about. If you decide to take part you can choose which experiences you would like to talk to me about. You can also stop the conversation or decide that you no longer want to take part in the research at any time and you do not have to give a reason.

What will happen to my information?

I would like to audio record our conversation so that I can write down what is said. As soon as I have written it down I will delete the recording. I will get your permission to include the information that you give me and it will only be included if you agree. I will not include your real name in the research and all other names of people and places will be changed. If you like I can show you a copy of the written conversation and you can decide if there is anything you want to take out.

I hope that you will feel comfortable to speak to me about anything. If you tell me any information that makes me concerned for your safety I will have to speak to someone in your school about this and I will tell you if this needs to happen.

The information that the other people give me about their experience in your ‘school swap’ (e.g. a staff member at your school and your parent/carer) is also confidential which means that no one will know what they say except me. This means you will not be able to know what they have said, and they will not know what you have said. It is important that you feel comfortable with this before you agree to take part.

What if something goes wrong?
If you feel unhappy at any time during the project I hope that you will feel able to talk to me. You can also contact my supervisor Dr Tom Billington at the University of Sheffield (email: t.billington@sheffield.ac.uk, phone number 0114 222 8177) or David Hyatt (Chair of Ethics at The University of Sheffield) d.hyatt@sheffield.ac.uk.

What happens next?

If you would like to take part in the study both you and your parent/carer will need to sign the consent form and return it to me. If you do not want to take part you do not have to do anything and you do not have to say why.

Thank you for reading this letter. Please contact me (Helen) if you would like any more information (07922643905, hrowe1@sheffield.ac.uk).
d. **Staff consent form**

**Research Project:** The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a 'School Swap'.

**Name of Researcher:** Helen Rowe

**Participant Identification Number for this project:**

1. I have read the information letter and I have had the opportunity to ask questions about the research.

2. I understand that my participation is voluntary and that I am free to withdraw at any point without giving any reason. In addition if I do not wish to answer any particular question or questions, I am free to decline.

3. I understand that my interview will be audio recorded and that what I say will be written down.

4. I understand that my real name will not be included in the research and that all other names of people and places will be changed. I understand that I will not be identified or identifiable in the reports that result from the research.

5. I understand that I will not be able to know what other people in the research have said about their experience in the ‘school swap’.

6. I agree for my anonymised data to be used in future research.

7. I agree to take part in the research.

________________________  __________________  __________________
Name of Participant      Date                     Signature

________________________  __________________  __________________
Name of Researcher       Date                     Signature

e. **Young person consent form**
**Research Project**: The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a ‘School Swap’.

**Name of Researcher**: Helen Rowe

**Participant Identification Number for this project:**

1. I have read the information letter and I have had the opportunity to ask questions about the research.

2. I understand that it is up to me whether I take part in the research. I can decide to stop taking part at any time and I do not need to explain why.

3. I understand that my interview will be audio recorded and then deleted once it is written down. What I say may be included in other research.

4. I understand that my real name will not be included in the research and that all other names of people and places will be changed.

5. I understand that I will not be able to know what other people in the research have said about me and their experience in my ‘school swap’.

6. I understand that my parent or carer will also need to give their permission before I can take part in the research.

7. **I agree to take part in the research.**

| __________________________ | __________________________ | __________________________ |
| Name of Participant       | Date                       | Signature                  |
| (young person)            |                            |                            |

| __________________________ | __________________________ | __________________________ |
| Name of Researcher        | Date                       | Signature                  |

134
f. Parent/Carer Consent Form (permission for child to participate)

**Research Project:** The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a ‘School Swap’.

**Name of Researcher:** Helen Rowe

**Participant Identification Number for this project:**

1. I have read the information letter and I have had the opportunity to ask questions about the research.

2. I understand that my consent is voluntary and that I can withdraw consent at any time.

3. I understand that the interview with my child will be audio recorded and that what they say will be written down. The audio recording will then be deleted.

4. I understand that my child’s real name will not be included in the research and that all other names of people and places will be changed.

5. I understand that I will not be able to know what other people in the research have said about my child and their experience in the ‘school swap’.

6. I agree for my child’s anonymised data to be used in future research.

7. I agree to my child taking part in the research.

________________________________________  __________________________  ____________________
Name of Participant (parent)          Date                        Signature

________________________________________  __________________________  ____________________
Name of Researcher                    Date                        Signature
g. Parent/Carer Consent Form

Research Project: The stories of young people, parents and staff who have been involved in a ‘School Swap’.

Name of Researcher: Helen Rowe

Participant Identification Number for this project:

1. I have read the information letter and I have had the opportunity to ask questions about the research.

2. I understand that my participation is voluntary and that I am free to withdraw at any point without giving any reason. In addition if I do not wish to answer any particular question or questions, I am free to decline.

3. I understand that my interview will be audio recorded and that what I say will be written down. The audio recording will then be deleted.

4. I understand that my real name will not be included in the research and that all other names of people and places will be changed. I understand that I will not be identified or identifiable in the reports that result from the research.

5. I understand that I will not be able to know what other people in the research have said about their experience in the ‘school swap’.

6. I agree for my anonymised data to be used in future research.

7. I agree to take part in the research.

________________________________________   ___________________   ______________________
Name of Participant (parent)   Date   Signature

________________________________________   ___________________   ______________________
Name of Researcher   Date   Signature

Appendix 5: Transcription conventions and pseudonyms used for anonymisation
a) Transcription conventions (from Jefferson, 2004)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Symbol</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(. )</td>
<td>Pause less than 1 second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3)</td>
<td>Pause length in seconds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>((laughs)))</td>
<td>Non-verbal communication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[  ]</td>
<td>Speech overlaps</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Underscore</strong></td>
<td>Emphasis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>???</td>
<td>Inaudible</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

b) Pseudonyms used for anonymity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Symbol</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td>Researcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O</td>
<td>Owen- (young person-participant)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>Sarah (mum-participant)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W</td>
<td>Miss Williams (staff-participant)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xold school</td>
<td>Old school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xthis school</td>
<td>Present school (new)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xschool</td>
<td>School name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr X</td>
<td>Teacher name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XTA</td>
<td>Teaching Assistant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xstaff member</td>
<td>Staff member</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xeducational psychologist</td>
<td>Educational Psychologist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xpeer</td>
<td>Peer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xtutoring service</td>
<td>Tutoring service</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xschool mental health support</td>
<td>School mental health support</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xplace</td>
<td>Place name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xlocal authority</td>
<td>Local authority</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xthis local authority</td>
<td>Local Authority where the</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xvariable</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>---------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aunty X</td>
<td>Aunty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xfootball team</td>
<td>Football team</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xwebsite</td>
<td>Website name</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

research took place
Appendix 6: Pilot study

a: Reflections on the Pilot Study

A short pilot study was carried out with a year 10 student ‘Anna’ who had recently undergone a school ‘swap’. The purpose of my pilot study was practice using the recording device, as well as my interview techniques, including using the narrative based prompts and the semi-structured interview prompts. During the pilot study I also tested out using a visual tool based on the ‘Life Grid’ (Wilson, Cunningham-Burley, Bancroft, Backett, Millburn & Masters, 2007). This is a visual tool which can aid in the mapping of important life events against the passage of time in order to prompt wide-ranging discussion (Wilson et al., 2007). Such an approach is said to be advantageous in creating a more relaxed atmosphere due to the process of co-construction and mutual collaboration, as well as helping participants to reflect on significant events. Further, it is said to facilitate discussion around sensitive issues (Wilson et al, 2007). I had wondered whether to use such a tool either before the narrative interview or during, to act as a discussion aid.

During the pilot study I asked Anna what she would prefer in this respect, and she said that she would prefer to start talking and that we could complete the ‘life grid’ as we went along. I asked her if she wanted to fill it out or whether I should, and she said she would prefer if I did it. On reflection I felt that whilst this tool was useful for myself in helping me to make notes about what was being said, it did not appear to add any value from the young person’s perspective. I asked Anna if she had found it useful and she indicated that it had neither been helpful or a hindrance. I felt that at times it stalled a naturally occurring conversation as she was occasionally waiting for me to add something to the timeline. I wondered whether it would have been more useful for her to write a few ideas on the timeline prior to the interview, in order to help her to organise her thoughts. After reflection with my research supervisor, I decided to take a flexible approach in my interviews. I decided that I would ask Owen whether he wanted to plan his thoughts before we began the interview or not. I felt that the adult participants would probably not need this based on the interactions that I had had with them previously. During the interview itself, with all participants, I decided not to map out the ‘life grid’ unless participants were struggling to remember or articulate their thoughts.

As a result of the pilot I was also able to reflect on my approach to a narrative based interview, as well as the appropriateness of the semi-structured interview prompts (see appendix 5b for the pilot interview schedule). In general I felt that the prompts were too prescriptive and that I wanted to give participants more freedom in creating their own
narratives, without having specific ‘questions’ to answer. For example I started the interview asking Anna to start ‘at the beginning’ which I prescribed as being ‘before the swap’. After reflection with my supervisor I decided to keep this open and to give participants the option regarding where they wanted to start. I decided that I would have some very general interview prompts (see appendix 7) in order to ensure that the interview data would help me to answer my research questions, without participants feeling restricted by prescribed questions. This is in line with my research aims in ensuring that the voice of participants is truly heard. As is cited by Dyson (1998), ‘the subjects of research have themselves to participate in construction of knowledge about themselves’ (p. 4).
1. **Introduction - points to discuss:**

- Explanation about study
- Information & consent sheets
- Not looking for anything in particular: your story
- Confidential
- Don’t have to talk about anything that you don’t want to
- Can stop at any time, decide you don’t want to do it any more at any time
- Recording
- Pseudonym
- Discussion about the interview at the end: what works/doesn’t for next student.

2. **Prompts for timeline activity**

- Explain: Want to talk about time before the SWAP, what it was like in your old school.
- Teachers & students, friends, lessons
- Anything in place to help you? What was not helpful? How did you feel?
- What happened to make the SWAP happen
- During the SWAP (involvement in decisions, when told, what told)
- After
- Now
- Hopes for future
- Your voice/involvement in decisions

3. **Narrative therapy based prompts (see appendix 1)**

4. **Anything you wish I had asked**

5. **Evaluation of session**
Appendix 7: Interview schedules and semi-structured prompts

a. Parent & Child

Introduction - points to discuss

- Reminder about the study
- Reminders about info & consent sheets
- Right to withdraw
- Don’t have to talk about anything you don’t want to.
- Pseudonym
- Recording

Semi-structured prompts (general guide)

- Tell me about your experience with the school swap (start wherever you’d like).
- Old school?
- Lead up to swap?
- During swap?
- After swap?
- Now?
- Educational experiences to date?
- Involvement in decisions?
- What was helpful/not?
- What would have been better?
- What else would have helped?
- Hopes for the future?

See narrative-therapy based prompts (appendix 1)
b. **Staff**

**Introduction - points to discuss**

- Reminder about the study
- Reminders about info & consent sheets
- Right to withdraw
- Don’t have to talk about anything you don’t want to.
- Pseudonym
- Recording

**Semi-structured prompts (general guide)**

- Tell me about your experience with Owen (start wherever you’d like).
- Information from old school?
- Reasons for the swap?
- During swap?
- After swap?
- Now?
- What has been helpful/not?
- What would have been better?
- What else would have helped?
- Understanding of/thoughts on the Fair Access Panel/Swaps as an alternative to permanent exclusion?
- Hopes for Owen’s future?
Appendix 8: Summary: Recommendations for the Local Authority

As a result of this research Thesis, it is advised that the following recommendations are made to the Local Authority:

- Schools to be supported to develop knowledge and practice in order to meet the needs of CYP with a range of Special Educational Needs, particularly SEMH needs.
- Schools to be supported to develop practice around meeting the needs of CYP and families deemed ‘at risk’ of exclusion. Such children to be prioritised with SENCO involvement, supported by involvement of outside agencies as needed.
- Schools to be supported to foster staff wellbeing and resilience, particularly in relation to working with pupils whose behaviour presents as ‘challenging’.
- Schools to be supported to develop awareness and understanding of the SEN Code of Practice, and how this applies to their daily involvement with CYP and families.
- Schools to be supported to implement robust Assess-Plan-Do-Review practices.
- Develop the knowledge of staff regarding the role of outside agencies. In particular, the role of the Educational Psychology Service, and how EPs can support schools to support vulnerable CYP and families.
- Develop staff awareness of the damaging effects of ‘moving’ pupils (either through a ‘managed move’ or a ‘permanent exclusion’) particularly for those CYP with difficult home lives.
- Developing staff knowledge regarding government legislation and guidance regarding ‘permanent’, ‘fixed term’ and ‘internal’ inclusions, as well as processes such as ‘managed moves’.
- Support schools within the LA to ensure that CYP are not missing education due to disciplinary sanctions.
- Professionals to be supported to develop practice in meaningfully and purposefully involving parents, carers and CYP within Fair Access Protocols and within education generally in the LA.
- Robust Fair Access Protocols to be in place, whereby schools are supported to do everything they can to meet CYP needs before considering ‘moving’ a pupil, either through a ‘managed move’, ‘swap’ or ‘permanent exclusion’. Robust systems to be in place to ensure schools and academies are held accountable for this, and that the needs of the child are at the centre of all decision making processes.
Where ‘moving’ a pupil is used as a last resort, schools and the LA to be supported to implement good practice guidelines regarding such practices, including:

1. Ensuring that this is a ‘voluntary agreement’ by parents/carers and CYP, and that the threat of exclusion is never used to influence this decision.

2. The involvement of an impartial ‘mediator’ who can oversee the move and ensure this is successful.

3. Genuine collaboration with CYP and families at all stages of the process.

4. Following good practice for transition support (considering before, during, after).

5. Priority placed on the development of trusting and positive relationships with both staff and peers.

6. Ensuring that staff are supported to understand CYP needs, and that provision meets these needs. Improving communication between schools and parents is central to this.
**Appendix 9: Analysed transcripts**

a. Owen interview 1 with analysis

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TRANSCRIPT</th>
<th>COMMENTS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. R: So ( ) start wherever you want to ( ) want to start what do you want to tell me about first?</td>
<td>&quot;Injustice&quot;, &quot;I don't care?&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. O: ( ) I just found it stupid being honest.</td>
<td>Anger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. R: Yeah.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. O: Cos like (1) I understand why they did it cos they had to try and make an example ( )</td>
<td>Understanding</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. R: Mm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. O: and like ( ) but just having one hour in and then one hour here it just made it horrible and ( ) awkward for everybody. ( ) Cos like I weren't allowed out during them hours ( ) so it made it awkward (1) for me to like ( ) obviously want to interact with me mates outside of school</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. R: Mmm.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. O: (1) and then like when i'm during the day ( ) cos they just didn't wanna leave me on my own for three hours and they don't ( ) and cos I can't be caught outside of school so I can't walk it.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. R: Mm hmm.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. O: I can't really ( ) do much so like I'm basically ( ) getting ( ) I were getting someone to sit at home with me ( ) and basically sit there all day (1) waiting. And then sticking me school uniform on ( ) just for an hour. (1)</td>
<td>&quot;What's the point&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. R: So was that when you were at your old school?</td>
<td>Inconvenient, mates important</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. O: [Yeah (1)] when I were like ( ) cos they put me on what they call twilight.</td>
<td>Powerless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. R: Right ok then. (1) Mm hmm.</td>
<td>Inconvenient, not beneficial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. O: And it ( ) I just found it stupid.</td>
<td>Resignation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. R: Ok.</td>
<td>Powerless, not my decision</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16. O: I were I mean when I were doing it ( ) it ( ) teacher that were setting it me which were me head of year were just (1) doing (1) well just giving me work that I had. ( ) And if I didn't understand it ( ) I literally just sat there ( ) and did now (1).</td>
<td>Making true feelings?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. R: Mm</td>
<td>Making himself feel better?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18. O: But ( ) I were there during their break ( ) which got proper busy ( ) and (1) cos everyone didn't (1) everyone just kept coming in (1) where I were working ( ) and everyone were saying to me trying to talk to me and interact with me so like</td>
<td>&quot;They were useless&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19. R: Mm</td>
<td>Powerless, feeling wasteful?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20. O: I were thinking ( ) I wanna get on with my work ( )</td>
<td>Not wanting to be seen by others, embarrassed, confidentious</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
147
O: No.
R: (.) Ok. (. .) So how did that make you feel then being on this twilight zone?
O: (. .) A bit (. .) annoyed and like (. .) stressed cos (. .) annoyed because (. .) I’m the one missing out on my learning (. .) ‘It’s not them (. .) that’re suffering from it it’s me. And I feel (. .) I feel (. .) I was restricting everybody (. .) And stressed cos like they were giving me this work that I didn’t understand (. .) And then like (. .) they expected me to do it when I don’t understand it and I didn’t understand how they expect me to do summat (. .) I’ve not learned.
R: (.) Yeah course well that’s understandable (. .) So what did you have to do then were you (. .) were you like in a room by yourself or what?
O: (. .) I was like (. .) we had head of department on top floor (. .) and I was (. .) second (. .) I (. .) think it was (. .) third floor (. .) so I was in this like little department area (. .) where (. .) heads of year (. .) and (. .) my head of year literally just (. .) did nothing (. .) Because it was near Christmas they like got me to help ‘em do little jobs cos cos they had a Christmas tree.
R: (.) Right.
O: (. .) And he said I got told (. .) I helped to set up that so (. .) like (. .) yeah (. .)
R: (.) Ok. (. .) And (.) so were you (. .) who gave you your work to do then for those couple of hours?
O: (. .) Head of year.
R: (.) Right. (. .) And do you think they got it from your teacher?
O: (.) No. (. .)
R: (.) No they didn’t.
O: (.) No they didn’t he said (. .) I got given this piece (. .) cos you have one music lesson there.
R: (Mm . hmm .)
O: (. .) I got given this piece of Bob Marley that I had to fill in (. .) I’ve never listened to a song of Bob Marley (. .) He (. .) all I know is he (. .) (laughs) (. .) used to be a signer songwriter.
R: (.) Who Bob Marley did you say?
O: (.) Yeah.
R: (.) (laughs) Oh right.
O: (.) And (. .) he literally said this isn’t from any of your teachers none of work I give you is (. .) This is just what I had when this lad broke his leg outside of school.
R: (.) Right (. .) I see
O: (.) I gave it to him.
63. R: (...) So you had a little bit of music work to do and did you have any other things to do?
64. O: I had (...) literally bad this maths book (1) where basically I did what I wanted out of it. (...) I had an eng like this English book where I literally just read a bit of it and wrote something.
65. R: Mm hmm.
66. O: Er with questions and then I had like occasionally I'd get given my science book what I'd go through and I had history one.
67. R: Right.
68. O: One of heads of year were an history teacher as well.
69. R: (...) So were you sat in a room on your own then or were you with a staff member?
70. O: I were sat in a room on me own, (1) Cos like there's these double doors that you have through (...)
71. R: Yeah.
72. O: And you have (...) two tables (...) with a chair (...) and like oh and a settee on the other side. (...) And I literally sat on one of desks (...) and did me work there with people coming in and out cos there's like a classroom at side of me (...) I don't know what it were for but I knew kids got taught in it like year 11's.
73. R: Mmm.
74. O: At their breaks they'd all go and sit outside on chairs, (...) and then they're all trying to talk with me.
75. R: Mm.
76. O: And like I'm just trying to get on with my work.
77. R: (...) Yeah ok. (...) And did you know them? Did you know those students?
78. O: ([laughs]) No but by end of it I ended up knowing them really well cos (1) if there were a piece of work that I didn't know (...) I'd like (...) I'd rather talk to someone than just sit there being bored if you know what I mean.
79. R: [Yeah] course. (1) Ok. (1) Erm (1) what would have been more helpful do you think? (1) For you.
80. O: If I actually had someone there who'd help me. (1) Cos like (...) they literally just sat in their office or ran around school doing whatever. (...) And I literally got to just sit there.
81. R: Mm
82. O: and do whatever I knew. (...) And (...) all work they were giving me weren't (1) exactly challenging me. (2) Cos like (1) i'm better at maths and English now than were then but (2) they didn't help me.
83. R: Mm hmm.
84. O: In maths ((exasperated laugh)) they didn't help me
85. R: Mm
86. O: Isolated
85. R: Mmm. (.) How long were you doing it for then?
86. O: (1) Couple of weeks.
87. R: Right. (2) So you went in for 9 and then did somebody have to pick you up then at like 10 o’clock?
88. O: Yeah. (1) They’d lock me out or receptionist (.) would (.) let me in in morning and at night. (.) And they’d let me go when(.) at times.
89. R: Mmm...mrm.
90. O: (.) And (.) I always ended up being met by someone outside.
91. R: (.) Like your mum or your dad was it?
92. O: Yeah. (.) Or my aunty.
93. R: (.) Oh your aunty.
94. O: (1) yeah.
95. R: (1) And what did you do when you were when you were at home then or when you left school?
96. O: I sat down and (.) did nowt (.) Like cos if I go if they give me homework (.) I’d do that homework. (1) But (.) then I’d have nowt to do and take me (.) like 5 minutes whereas (.) cos I was on twilight once I finished at 3 (4) I then got in (.) had my tea (.) did me homework and by then it were already like 5 so I’m thinking (1) and it’s already dark so there’d be like no point in me going out.
97. R: (.) Yeah yeah (.) yeah.
98. O: Cos then I’m missing out on like going out with my mates and that.
99. R: (.) Is it important for you to be with your with your mates?
100. O: Yeah.
101. R: Mm mrm.
102. O: But like (.) cos I think (.) they fly apart from me mates at my mum’s side. (.) But twilight hasn’t helped me cos like (.) they’ve I’ve started to slowly fade away cos of twilight cos I’ve obviously not been able to spend as much time with [them.]
103. R: [Yeah]
104. O: And then (.) I’m now just (.) I’m now just left out of things completely so I think (.) what’s the point in me asking them
105. R: Mmm
106. O: when they’re just gonna say (.). oh (.). we’ve not seen you for however long (.). why should we start hanging back out again?
107. R: Yeah. (.). I see what you mean (.) And so when you were doing the twilight did you really see those friends did you not?
108. O: No.
109. R: Right. (.) And when would you have...
110. O: (. .) Er (. .) I’d have normally (. .) walked up to school with someone when I were at me mums. (. .) I’d have met ’em one of ’em at school an talked with them and that. (. .) At breaks and dinners and before school (. .) I’d meet up with them after school. (. .) Walk home (. .) we’d all go get changed and then we’d meet up and then (. .) we’d be out until about (. .) six seven o’clock.

111. R: [Yeah]

112. O: (Which) cos it were drawing in and cold (. .) whereas in summer we were out till like 9ish.

113. R: Mm. (. .) So when you were doing this twilight you weren’t (. .) you didn’t see them very much.

114. O: No I didn’t.

115. R: Right. (. .) And what do you think they thought of it all?

116. O: I don’t know. (. .)

117. R: If you could guess what do you think they might have been thinking?

118. O: (. .) I were just thinking they thought (. .) they don’t care about us so why should we care about him.

119. R: Mm. (. .) Do you think they (. .) did they know why you were doing the twilight or anything?

120. O: (. .) A lot of kids at school knew why I were doing it I think. (. .) But a lot of kids didn’t know (. .) what it were I were doing. (. .) Cos I saw (. .) a lot of ’em like so I’d go in and (. .) some of ’em (. .) had seen me there cos some of ’em were (. .) late or (. .) I got sent out of like got told to do summant or this that and other. (. .) And then I’d see ’em (. .) when I were leaving at break. (. .) At their (. .) well during their break. (. .) And then I’d (. .) see ’em when I’m coming in (. .) and sometimes they’d see me if I were doing like little jobs up and down.

121. R: Mm.

122. O: Cos like I were I did this like art project thing.

123. R: Right.

124. O: (. .) That I had to do (. .) and (. .) a lot of me mates saw me when I were taking that down which were only 30 seconds job but (. .) I got seen by a lot of ’em.

125. R: And do you did they ask did they talk to you or did they ask you anything?

126. O: No (. .) They just said oh! Owen.

127. R: (. .) Ok. (. .) Ok. (. .) Em (. .) so (. .) what (. .)
128. O: ( ) Cos when I were at school in primary as well ( ) there were this kid who used to always pick on me we’d play football I’d tackle him. ( ) Because I’m the only one who’d tackle him ( ) he got right stressed saying oh you’re dirty this that and other (to

129. R: [Mm]

130. O: escort wind me up ( ) So then if I said owt to him he’d start crying his eyes out tell a teacher ( ) or whatever. ( ) And like so then I just thought ignore him and then (1) he said stuff to me like oh just die this that and other. ( ) And then like (1) he started square up to me ( ) and ( ) we got in a fight. ( ) But cos he were down and everyone were around me saying oh kick him kick him kick him ( ) and I were being shoved and all of that and everyone were going like that (showing finger moving) symbolizing kicking (1) I ended up doing it ( ) thinking ( ) oh this’ll make me more popular.

131. R: [Mm]

132. O: But ( ) cos he threw first punch I thought oh now’ll happen to me. ( ) Whereas instead ( ) he got told to go to hospital cos he were being sick ( ) and I just got told ( ) or you’re in ( ) exclusion. ( ) But then ( ) some people ( ) it turned out some people had recorded it ( ) so I end up ( ) off school for two days. (1) And ended up spending ( ) I were gonna meant to be spending one day ( ) in exclusion. ( ) Instead I spent ( ) three days in exclusion which ( ) drove my absolute head in.

133. R: (1) Right. (2) And ( ) and this three days in exclusion what did that involve?

134. O: You literally ( ) you go to (1) school a bit later ( ) but your school day’s longer you finish like an hour later (1) and that. ( ) Cos I were going at normal time finishing ( ) at normal time ( ) and all I were doing were literally sitting there with a book in front of me doing what I wanted. (1) But every morning ( ) I had to write ( ) why I were in there ( ) And ( ) whenever I wrote summation that were true ( ) all the teachers looked right shocked and said ( ) oh you can’t write that in cos we cos we don’t ( ) know that’s not truth and I goes ( ) what you don’t know that he punched me first ( ) And ( ) saying I’m ( ) racist and that. ( ) Cos apparently I called him ( ) an N word ( ) when I didn’t?
O: Some of other kids (1) But all the kids (2) that were actually there during it (.) know I didn’t (.) and knew that he started it.

R: Yeah ok. (1) So you used to have to go in (.) so were you in the same room as you were in for the twilight?

O: No.

R: Right.

O: It’s like (2) now (.) here we have like a few warnings and there it were same but (.) instead of re-allocations you got (.) on call (.) Where you got picked up and you got sent (.) to that room (.) And I were there for an hour extra as well.

R: (.) Ok. (2) So you came in on a morning and you had to write down why you were in there.

O: Yeah.

R: So (.) and so you were like writing down what (.) what had happened.

O: Yeah.

R: (.) And (1) and did you say that you thought they didn’t believe you?

O: Yeah.

R: Right. (1) Why do you think they didn’t believe you?

O: Cos like (3) erm (.) when I were writing it (.) they’d like cos I were only one in there they just looked over your shoulder and watched you don’t (.) And then like you’d say oh yeah here look I’ve done it.

R: Mm.

O: Just looked at you and say (.) right you can write another one (1) because I doubt that’s the truth.

R: Mm hmm. (1) Ok. (.) So how did all that make you feel?

O: (.) A bit frustrated but (.) what made it worse is (.) when we were in fight everyone were always asking oh is he alright is he alright. (1) It took me (.) to ask them (.) if ((Voice cracks)) said (.) he does no one care about me?

R: Yeah.

O: Cos I’m one who’s in fight as well (.) for all you know (.) I’ve (.) broken a rib (.) but no one’s asked me if I’m all right (have you (.) ((Voice cracks)))

R: (Yeah) course (.) So you felt as if they were bothered about him but they weren’t so bothered about you.

O: Yeah.

R: Do you want a tissue?
R: No, I'm all right.

O: Yeah (laughs)

R: (1) This is all really helpful, so thank you for telling me all of this. (1) Or like I was saying (1) erm (.) we don't often get to hear like your side of things.

O: Yeah.

R: You know like what's what's happened that's made you (.) you know change schools and (.) erm (.) and it's really important that we know (.) because (.) you know we (.) we want to improve it all for (.) for the future and things like that and (.) erm (.) and it's not very good that you feel like (.) you know (.) nobody was (2) erm (.)

O: Well I mean (.) if I (.) I'd rather be at this school than other school cos it's a lot better (.) despite (.) mum getting on at me for picking this school (.) and all of that.

R: Yeah (right)

O: I'd still rather be here because (.) I'm getting better education (.) I've got better mates (.) and (.) it's just (.) a better school all round (.)

R: Ah (right)

O: [Sure it's] stricter.

R: Yeah.

O: But I'd rather be at a strict school where all (.) than be at a school full of (.) all the idiots and thickos that always want to mess about and get into (.) (.) (.)

R: Yeah (.) Well that's good that you're that (.)

O: You like it here.

R: Yeah.

O: Yeah. (.) Erm (.) so what what (1) so with your old school then it was Xold school wasn't it?

R: Yeah.

O: Yeah.

R: (1) Erm (.) and so what was it maybe that you didn't like so much about that school?

O: (2) Fights were (.) when everyone's going round (.) you'd literally walk in school (.) and first thing you hear from the kid's mouth were a swear word.

R: What?

O: (1) Or you were (.) like (1) there were a fight (.) nearly enough every break (.) and dinner (.) were like (.) there were kids there that were smoking going round saying (.) oh have a cig have a cig (.) or or like having (.) what looked (.) what only way I can describe it were like little gummy bears but they
didn’t look like gummy bears if you know what I mean.

R: Mm hmm.

180. O: (2) And (1) just the whole thing about it cos I mean (1) all teachers (1) literally just sat there you can do what you want (1) And as long as you wrote a title and date in your book (1) and (1) a couple of lines (1) teachers were happy.

R: (1) Right. (1) Ok. (1) And what’s it like here then?

182. O: It’s a lot better cos you actually get to do work.

R: Mm hmm.

184. O: I mean but (1) it’s not just easy work it’s work that’s actually challenging you.

R: Mm hmm.

186. O: I mean (1) at Xold school (1) I were in (1) like (3) second set (1) for English (1) Second set for everything except but top for maths (1) And (1) it were just (1) horrible (1) Cos I mean like (1) only reason I wanted a higher set were because I weren’t being challenged (1) it were literally just easy work (1) For maths it were easy work.

R: Mm hmm. (1) At Xold school you mean?

188. O: Yeah where as now I’m like getting challenging work and I’ve moved up to first set (2) they’ve helped (1) he’s helped me build my confidence with me drawing and that cos me (1) I remember (1) in Primary and in Xold school (1) if I’ve gotta sit over there and do drawing (1) I cried me eyes out over it.

R: You cried your eyes out when?

190. O: Where I were (1) you know Xold school

R: yeah

192. O: I’d cry me eyes out if I got set a piece of work where cos these have helped (1) here’s helped me build (1) me confidence up with me drawing (1) some one asks me to draw and I’d happily do it.

R: Now you mean?

194. O: Yeah.

R: Did you use to like drawing?

196. O: No.

197. R: Ok.

198. O: I’d do everything I could to get out of it.

R: Did you (1) And what have they done to help you build your confidence here then?

200. O: (3) Having nice teachers that are like (1) encouraging and that.

R: (1) Mm hmm.
202. O: And just like (.) came (.) came here (.)
   teacher that taught me were Mr X for German but he's left now. And (2) he helped me with my German (.)"I've never heard a word of German ([laughs]) apart from uncle who (1) swears in German ([laughs])"
   R: ([laughs])
   relationships

203. R: ([laughs]) does he?

204. O: Cos he's a lorry driver and it makes 'em (.)
   all back away.
   R: ([laughs])

206. O: (2) So it were like first (.) words of German I heard and (.) were in top set cos I (.) think (.) they thought (.) if we put him in top set then we can always work him down (.) And I still haven't been moved down now (.) and (.) it's (1) it's like a second (.) me second language how.
   R: ([laughs]) is it?

208. O: (1) I can find it (.) if I'm (.) in my lesson with me German book (.) I can (.) can I (1) I'm alright at it.
   R: (2) That's really good so and you'd never done German before?


211. R: (.) Before you came here (1) That's good.
   (3) Mm hmm.

212. O: (1) Yeah.

213. R: (1) So how does it make you feel that you've not had to be moved down then?

214. O: (1) Happy and proud.

215. R: Mmm.

216. O: Cos I think like (.) I've shown em (.) yeah (.) I've made a mistake (1) But (1) I won't 'm just a stupid boy who's made a stupid mistake.
   R: Yeah (.) could (.) And what do you think that they think?

218. O: (1) What do you (.) who's?

219. R: Like teachers and stuff

220. O: I guess (.) I don't know (2) But like (2) I like a lot of me teachers I like all me teachers.

222. O: But I think like (1) I'll see (.) teachers (2) that I had last year and they all say oh hey up Owen this that and other (3) yeah.

223. R: Well that's really good (1) Erm (2) Are you thinking about ([laughs]) in the school then?

224. O: (2) Kids are better (.) If I'm honest (.)
   They're not all walking round looking for a fight or looking for someone who can give some cigarettes.
   R: Mmm (2) Yeah (2) Cos you had a lot of friends as well didn't you in your old school?

226. O: Yeah (.) Whereas here (.) proper friendly
mean ( ) I followed X on my first day ( ) and then
( ) he start ( ) and then on second day I got me (1)
own plan and like (2) for first day ( ).
227. R: Mmm
228. O: I didn't ( ) know anyone like and ( ) I had a
( ) apart from older kids so I thought first ( ) three or
four weeks ( ) I was mainly with ( ) older kids that I
knew ( ) that are like ( ) at the moment in year 10 and
( ) year 10. ( ) they're ones I hang out with. ( ) And ( )
now (1) I'm like ( ) and then I started to ( ) frida makes
some friends that are in my year ( ) and I just started
going with friends that were in my year.
229. R: (1) That's good. ( ) So do you feel like
you've made some friends here?
231. R: Yeah. (1) Ok. ( ) And how do you feel about
( ) about them?
232. O: (3) Happy cos they're like mates cos ( )
they're nice.
233. R: Yeah.
234. O: Yeah.
235. R: ( ) And how do they compare to your
friends who were at X school then?
236. O: They're not (1) at walking round acting like
( ) they're hard ( ) right hard or like (1) or when we go
out they're like not saying oh come on then ( ) we'll have
a fight or they've like ( ) seen someone that accidently
catches someone. (4) Plus ( ) I think cos they're smart
( ) it's encouraging me to try harder so I'm (1) cos like

237. R: Yeah.
238. O: I'm competitive. (1) if ( ) I'll try and make
friends with people that are smarter than me ( ) cos
then I think of it as a competition to try and get (1)
even ( ) smarter than they are. -- good relationships
239. R: (laughs) what do you mean smarter?
240. O: Like (1) they're smarter than I am (1)
241. R: Sorry that's my phone ringing let me just
put it off ( ) yeah.
242. O: ( ) Yeah so like (2) I mean (1) they know
more stuff (1) so like I'm trying to learn (1) more if you
know what I mean
243. R: Yeah ( ) like in your lessons and things.
244. O: Yeah.
245. R: Well that's really good it sounds like you
why wanna do well.
246. O: Yeah.
247. R: Have you always been like that do you
think?
248. O: Yeah. (1) I've been described as a sponge

That's not me I'm not a fighter
I am better than that

Friends are nice

The students are friendly here
Peer buddy

I've made friends
Proud of self
Seeking acceptance
Wanting to fit in

Friends are nice

Emphasizing how bad
To do better?

Friends are nice

Wanting to prove self
Determined
Resilient

I want to be smart

I'm wanting to build positive
sense or self.

I am smart

I'm described or sponge

like it.

Yes it's true.
249. R: Have you? (.) What do you think that means?
250. O: Like (2) that (.) if I get told summat (.) I'll take it in best I can (.) But (.) if I get told (.) not to do
251. R: Yeah
252. O: If (1) if I got told not to do summat cos this'll happen (1) I'm that person who'd have to end up finding it out for myself.
253. R: (((laughs)))
254. O: Like me dad once told me not to touch an exhaust cos it's hot (.) I still went and did it. (((laughs)))
255. R: (((laughs))) Yeah. (1) Who said who says that about you then that you're a sponge?
256. O: Er (.) teachers at (.) me primary school (1) and (.) other people that I've met.
257. R: Yeah. (.) Do you think (.) like (.) do you what do you think about that do you
258. O: I just take it as a complement.
259. R: Do you. (.) Well that's good. (.) See what I mean.
260. O: Yeah. (.) Cos I mean like (1) there's no point taking it as being offended is it.
261. R: Yeah.
262. O: I mean last thing you wanna do is work yourself down about it make yourself upset.
263. R: No (1) I think that sounds like a nice thing to say anyway. (1) Ok. (.) Erm (2) is there anything else that you sort of want to tell me about? About your (.) about your when you changed schools or about your old school or
264. O: No but (.) all I remember is I'm (.) me (.) is when I came here (.) (literally.) I got told (.) about cos I was coming here (.)
265. R: Mmm
266. O: Er (.) on like when I got shown round (.) I got told it don't matter (.) if (.) or if I didn't have to come in because I'm at Knew school cos I were at Knew school that day. (1) And I was like ok so (.) but (1) then (.) when I'm at home (.) I'm here I just sitting down watching TV (1) cos I can't (.) or (.) me dad'll like (.) take cos we've got a field behind us that no one goes on or he'll take me out and I'll have a kick about with him.
267. R: Yeah.
268. O: Yeah.
269. R: (1) So (.) what (.) so are you were talking about your first day (.) were you? At Knew
school? (D) did you just say]

270. O: [no but like] (D) when I came for (D) cos that's when they were showing me round.

271. R: Ahh

272. O: Yeah.

273. R: And when was that then?

274. O: (1) Er a while ago er (D) my first (2) about (2) 18th of January. (D) Cos my first day on my timetable I think were 21st of January.

275. R: Mm hmm

276. O: So (2) think my first (1) day at (D) like having a (D) like round like the school with me parents (D) were 18th of January.

277. R: So that's quite a long time after Christmas then?

278. O: Yeah.

279. R: So what were you doing after Christmas?

280. O: (1) I were still on twilight.

281. R: Ooh.

282. O: Incident happened before Christmas (D)

283. R: Mm hmm

284. O: Happened before Halloween er but just after Halloween (D) I think (D) and I were on twilight for ages and (D) weren't benefiting from it (D) No one was.


286. O: Only thing it meant were (D) school were saying oh (D) we've still got an extra pupil (D) And all it did were get me me mark which (D) I mean like (D) I were only doing two hours a day (D) I may as well be sat at home behind a computer googling stuff (D) haven't I (D) very trying one whole!

287. R: [Mmm] (D) Yeah. (D) especially if you haven't got a teacher in there.


289. R: (D) So erm (D) when did they tell you about you coming here then or what did they say to you?

290. O: Erm (D) I got asked (D) what do I what school I wanna go to and I straight away turned around and said X this school cos I know (D) older students that go there (D) and like (D) and (D) it's (D) it's already (D) and I mean it's a better school than this one (D) and I know that without even having a look at it (D) All you need to do is ask me mates and (D) they'll say it's better like but I mean (D) if you're saying this you wouldn't be gonna say the school's bad and because (D) a lot of kids like school

291. R: [Yeah] (D) So who who erm (D) so you were doing your twilight (D) yeah?
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Communication</th>
<th>Richardson</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Communication not good</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Communication not good</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richardson didn't know what was happening</td>
<td>Richardson</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
head's apart.

313. R: Really. (1) And was that was on your first visit was it?

314. O: Yeah. (.) But (.) me mum (1) my mum always says my dad's trying to get to her by through me whereas me dad's saying it's other way round and like (1) if (.) if my dad said it were Wed Friday today mum would say no it's not it's Saturday.

315. R: (1) Yeah. ( .) How does that make you feel?

316. O: ( .) I don't know cos like ( .) they both blame on each other

317. R: Mmm

318. O: and like (1) I know and then me mum gets on at me dad when he's not told me summers ( .) Whereas ( .) me mum then gets on at me dad ( .) when he's told me summers (.) and then she's saying that she shouldn't have told it me ( .) So she could have told it me and I goes ( .) what difference does it make? I've been told ( .) now I know.

319. R: Yeah. (1) So they say like ( .) two different things do they.

320. O: Yeah.

321. R: Mmm. (?)

322. O: ( .) Cos like (1) ( .) me mum ( .) she ended up ( .) Friday Mornings cos it's day of sang (1) And (1) it's just worst day.

323. R: That's they day that you change over from being with your mum or your dad is it?

324. O: Yeah.

325. R: Right ok. ( .) Why's it's normally like on a Monday?

326. O: When I'm coming to me dad's it's quite ( .) good or it's ( .) nice ( .) and good.

327. R: Mmm hm.

328. O: Whereas when I'm going to mum's (1) I'm ( .) I can never sleep on that Sunday when I'm going back to me mum's.

329. R: Can you not.

330. O: No. ( .) Cos if I have a good day at me ( .) dad's or a good week ( .) I can't sleep all night cos I'm just ( .) scared of going to me ( .) mum's.

331. R: Mmm. (1) What is it that you're sort of thinking about or worrying about?

332. O: I don't know cos like me mum will get at me ( .) for like owt and I'm just (1) scared that she's gonna ( .) get on at me again for sommat I haven't done.

333. R: Mmm. (1) Like what kind of thing?

334. O: Oh all sorts. (1) Cos ( .) I once didn't tell her
that I were doing running cos (.) she stopped taking me to football and every time I asked her she said (.) oh no cos your dad knows where I am. (.) And (.) so I didn't ask her if if she'd take me to running cos like I thought no cos your dad knows where I am. (2) And she found out (.) and she started ranting at me saying oh why didn't you tell me and I goes (1) 'cause you didn't ask me (.) you said I'm you're not taking me to football (.) cos me dad knows where I am and she goes oh yeah but running's different and I goes how is it he still knows where you are don't he. (.) So then she says you're either going to pick football or running so I picked football.

335. R: Mmm. (.) Right ok and you do foot and you still go to football?
337. R: Yeah. (.) Ok. (.) What do you think erm (.) your mum and your dad thought about (.) like (.) the incident and stuff that happened at (last) school?
338. O: (.) I don't know.
339. R: (.) Did they say anything?
340. O: (.) I know my mum just (.) looked upset (.) and me dad were there say and me dad was trying to stick up for me (.) whereas me mum (.) if I'd have forged I once forged a signature cos I got dared to (.) and she was there ranting and raving at me saying oh next time I'll call police and I'm like (.) what kind a parent does that (.) (voice breaks).
341. R: So what was that about?
342. O: Er cos I once forged (1) cos I er I once forged to sign my planner I thought I don't want detention cos I've got this tonight. (.) So (1) I forged the signature and she started ranting at me saying (.) oh you should get sent oh next time I'm ringing police this that and other (voice breaks) (.) and I like (.) and then me dad (.) whereas saying oh he's only a kid it's a silly mistake it's not like (.) over massive's gonna happen to you.
343. R: Yeah.
344. O: (.) And then (.) like it's like me mum's wanting to get me in trouble at times (.) (voice breaks)
345. R: Mmm.
346. O: Whereas me dad's seeing up and sees things from different points
347. R: Yeah.
348. O: of view
349. R: Yeah. (.) it's hard sometimes isn't it especially when (.) when you erm (1) I suppose when there's when they're telling you like two different
O: Yeah.

R: Yeah. (1) Well it sounds like you're doing really really well. (1) erm and I'm really pleased that it's going well for you here.

O: Yeah.

R: Erm (1) abo ehm so you know when they (1) or when Xord school told you about changing schools.

O: [Yeah]

R: [Yeah] (1) did they just say what school do you wanna go to? What did they say?

O: I literally got which school wanna go to (1) I said Xthis school (1) they asked me mum and me dad. (.) Me dad said Xthis school and I don't know what me mum said. (.) But (.) before I went to Xold school (.) where saying (.) I don't wanna go to Xold school (.) I wanna go to Xschool (.) or Xthis school. (.) Cos Xschool's in middle (.) but Xthis school's (.) Xthis school's got best (1) school.

O: Yeah.

R: O: And she goes (.) oh no they haven't er she's looking through internet trying to find all these bad things about Xthis school (1) and she come across this one (.) where this lass broke her arm (.) like her hand or her arm (.) and (.) they said (.) oh she's just sprained it and I goes (1) mum they aint got an X-ray machine. (.) Any school would have said the same thing (laughs). (1) I mean what would you guess and she goes oh I don't know I haven't seen photo and I goes right then so stop trying to slate the school (.) when you don't know what it was like.

R: Yeah.

O: For all you know (.) she were still moving it.

R: (2) Why do you think she was doing all of that?

O: Cos she didn't want me to do it.

R: To come here?

O: She didn't want me to come here cos like she was saying (.) oh if you go to Xthis school you aint you're making your own way there and your own way back here and I goes (.) so then when I were turning round and saying (.) if I just stop at me dad's (.) and come and visit you every other weekend (.) she went oh no you aint been home (.) And I goes right then when you take me and (1) she (.) tryna argue.

R: Yeah.

O: Yeah.

R: (.) Yeah. (.) It sound like you've er (.) you're doing really well. (1) erm (2) to do everything
that you're doing (.) with everything you've got going on. (1) Erm (1) ok (.) So let's think about (.) erm (1) what about (.) that conversation (.) What what was that like?

368. O: It were good.

369. R: Mmm.

370. O: It were (3) very (2) it were very strange cos like (.) you'd talk (.) you know cos you knew that like (.) So I came (1) and (.) think it were drama I had first and then like (.) I've done drama before and I were all right at it.

371. R: Mmm.

372. O: Er (.) so I did it and (.) Miss that like were proper praising me for it (.) and I'm swapping her as me drama teacher.

373. R: Ok.


375. R: (1) And what teacher was that again?

376. O: Miss X.

377. R: Ok (.) And she's your drama teacher?

378. O: She was my drama teacher now it's (2) er a Sir.

379. R: Ok.

380. O: And (.) that (5) and then (2) but then next day I had (.) PE but I heard some of lads talking that they had PE so I said to me I got home I said to me dad (.) can I take my PE kit cos I (.) I've heard some of lads on about (.) that they've got PE tomorrow so I says I might have it as well cos like (.) I don't know (2) so I took it just incase and .

381. R: Mmm.

382. O: I did as well.

383. R: Mmm.

384. O: (1) And I mean I think it were football we were doing that and they ended up doing (1) that (.) and (1) yeah.

385. R: (1) Yeah. (1) So how so did you er so you did drama on your first day

386. O: yeah.

387. R: and did you like that?

388. O: Yeah.

389. R: Mmm. Did you say you'd never done it before?

390. O: (2) I did it a little bit [but like]

391. R: [Yeah]

392. O: (1) not (1) proper like drama lessons at me old school we did drama but it were like (1) it weren't drama it were just (.) sitting in a room (.) talking about what you'd do if you were (2) an actress or actor.
O: You're actually doing stuff.
R: Yeah.
O: And you like ( ) get ( ) you like ( ) actually ( )
you know actually doing it.
R: Yeah. (1) Mm hnn. (1) How did you feel then on your first day coming here like in the morning and things?
O: Nervous but excited.
R: Mm (2) what were you hoping was gonna happen?
O: (2) I just hoping that I'd have a good ( ) day.
R: Yeah.
O: Yeah.
R: And did it go as well as you wanted it to?
O: Yeah.
R: Yeah. (1) What do you think or ( ) the other students were thinking (1) about you?
O: I don't know. (2) I mean ( ) not one of em tried tormenting me they were all ( ) right nice and ( ) you know (1) trying to introduce themselves and that.
R: (1) Yeah ( ) they were introducing you were they to people themselves?
O: Yeah.
R: Mm hnn.
O: And ( ) trying to like make me friends and make me feel better like ( ) I got told what were on like this ( ) when and ( ) where (1) and it were really good.
R: Yeah. ( ) Well that was good then. (1) So how did you feel at the end of the day?
O: (1) Er ( ) I felt happy and I thought ( ) this is the school I thought ( ) I belong at.
R: Yeah. ( ) Well that's good to hear. (1) Erm ( ) so you were talking about that drama teacher did you say she she was praising you? What was that about?
O: Like cos we did this drama thing and like ( ) cos I did well was I thought ( ) was like I literally just acted like I would have if it were real li- real ( ) in real ( ) life. ( ) Cos I mean it's basically what ( ) you've got to do everything except for melodrama.
R: Yeah ok. ( ) Mm hnn. ( ) And how did you feel about her praising you?
O: I felt really ( ) happy and proud.
R: Did you.
O: Yeah ( )
R: (1) And do you (.) erm did you tell anybody else about that?

O: (1) I told me parents.

R: What did they say?

O: They were really proud.

R: Were they

O: Yeah.

R: Well that’s good. (2) Is there anything (.) when you (.) is there anything or (.) since you’ve been here (.) that you think (.) would have made it even better?

O: (3) No.

R: (1) No?

O: No.

R: (1)[Everything’s been good]

O: Yeah.

R: (.) What about erm (1) is there anything that maybe you’ve been thinking about coming here?

O: (2) Er (2) there’s no (.) I can’t own bad about it ((laughs))

R: ((laughs)) (1) Yeah. (1) So you really like the teachers and the students

O: [Yeah]

R: [and the] lessons.

O: Yeah.

R: Is there any other way that it’s different then to Xold school?

O: (.) Yeah (.) we start at different time.

R: Oh right ok.

O: Like (.) here we finish at half past whereas at Xold school we finished at quarter to.

R: Mm hmm.

O: (1) And (2) you’ve more a variety of food and like (.) at Xold school (.) you get your food and you went outside. (.) Here (.) it’s the complete opposite. (.) A lot of people get their food (.) eat it inside then go outside.

R: Right.

O: Or if (.) or like me (.) I’ll get summat to eat (.) er eat it and then go to football on astro-turf.

R: Ah right ok. (.) And who do you do that with?

O: (.) Er (.) PE department go on it (.) but I play on with lads in my year (1) wear group and it’s always proper funny and that.

R: It is.

O: Yeah.
449. R: Is that at lunchtime?
450. O: Yeah.
451. R: Well that sounds good.
452. O: (2) I have (1) ev- (1) like everyone's friends
if you know what I mean like (.) no one says owt bad
about each other like (.) I sit on (.) in maths I have
Xpeer and Xpeer on my table (.) I didn't really know
them when I started it but like me and Ben has built
(.) up like (.) a friendship
453. R: Mm hmm
454. O: We don't like (.) we're not always with
each other but we are friends if you know what I
mean.
455. R: Yeah (.) Well that's good everyone's
friendly.
457. R: Mm hmm. (1) And it wasn't so much like
that at Xold school?
458. O: No.
459. R: Was was there was there anything you
liked about Xold school then?
460. O: (1) Er (5) only thing I liked (.) were maths
461. R: Mm.
462. O: (1) And (3) and (1) they did like (.) you
had houses but (1) you (1) it were awkward for you (.)
to know what house you were in cos like (.) you'd you
literally you had a tie for your year group
463. R: Mm hmm
464. O: which literally just symbolized your year
group whereas (.) you're having (.) with someone you
don't know what house they're in where as here (1)
you know what house you're in like me I've got yellow
???:
465. R: (1) Yeah (.) So it's a lot clearer.
466. O: yeah plus (.) yeah.
467. R: (1) Would you (1) if you could like (.)
would you change anything?
468. O: No. (2) No cos if I think (.) if I changed out
(.) I might not be where I am today
469. R: (1) Yeah (.) or (.) well that's good (.) What
about er like in the future where (.) if we think so how
old are you now?
470. O: Twelve.
471. R: Twelve so you'll be 13 14 15 16 so say
when you're like erm (.) when you've left school what
would you like to be doing?
472. O: Lawyer.
473. R: Oh.
474. O: I wanna be a lawyer.
475. R: (1) Why do you wanna be a lawyer?
476. O: Cos I just (1) cos I just think (3) I just wanna be a lawyer.
477. R: Mm mm.
478. O: I don’t know but cos I haven’t said cos I’ve thought with me and I’ve always said I wanna be like a police officer but now I wanna be a lawyer (1) or I wanna be like a police officer but I wanna be a lawyer (2) And that and (1) or (2) or (1) and he says you’re German so you could always be a translator and I was (1) or I could be a lawyer (1) but also a translator in my spare time.
479. R: Mmmmm that would be interesting.
480. O: Cos I’ll be making a lot of money.
481. R: Yeah.
482. O: Cos they both (1) can be a lot of money as it (1) without (1) other one.
483. R: (1) So do you know what subjects you would need to be a lawyer?
484. O: (1) English (3) I know you need English and I always forget one (1) maybe a bit of maths like cos (1) and then you’d (1) you’d (1) obviously need to know about law and that.
485. R: (2) So do you think you would need to like go to university or anything?
486. O: Yeah. (2) Go to university to study law.
487. R: (1) What university do you think you’d like to go to?
488. O: I don’t know.
489. R: (1) You’ll have you’ve got time to think.
490. O: Yeah.
491. R: (1) Who your dad knows you wanna be a lawyer does he?
492. O: (1) Mmm.
493. R: Does anyone else know?
494. O: Me mum.
495. R: What does she think of it?
496. O: She’s really happy about it cos if she does he’s a plumber and he always says (1) why do you wanna be a lawyer and I always go (1) cos I wanna make more money.
497. R: (1) And what about other things then do you what do you what do you imagine (1) do you imagine your life or (1) the same friends as you’ve got now (1) do you think you’ll be living here or (1)
498. O: I don’t (1) know.
499. R: (3) Just see what happens afterwards.

500. O: Yeah.

501. R: Ok.() well that all sounds really good. We've not got a lot of time left before the bell's gonna go.() er{}() is there anything else you wanna tell me about quickly?


503. R: () Well that's really helpful thanks Owen. I'll just pause this for now.

504. 46:13  total end time
PART 2

504. R: So yeah you told me loads of stuff the last time and it was really useful. So we were talking about er like your old school and when you (.) changed schools and (.) all about your school now and things like that.

505. O: Yeah.

506. R: Erm (1) yeah cos you were talking about (.) erm your old school (1) and (.) you said that you liked this school a lot more didn’t you?

507. O: Yeah.

508. R: Yeah. (1) Erm (.) I was just wondering if (.) erm (2) you could think of like a (.) sort of like a good time in your last school like a time that you remember when when things were good?

509. O: (5) I’ve got one (.)

510. R: Oh (.) I’m just thinking cos you weren’t there for very long anyway were you?

511. O: (2) No about 6 months.

512. R: Yeah.

513. O: I think. (1) But I know I remember one (2) erm (.) it was (.) opening evening and I remember being with my mates and that havin’ a right mess about and that.

514. R: (5) Min hmm on the open evening (1) like before you started there you mean or

515. O: (1) No when I were there cos (.) we were all helping out.

516. R: Aah

517. O: (1) So we ended up having some right good mess about and I remember (1) as well when I were doing cross country with ‘em (1) erm (2) with me (.) cos only two of me mates went (.) and that (1) having mess about with them.

518. R: Ah right ok (.) so what was the open evening for?

519. O: Erm (1) for (.) to let year sixes and fives have a look around.

520. R: Aah right so (.) what did you have to do?
O: (1) I literally (.) or look people around school (.) but when there were nobody 
they basically said (.) go and do what you want.

R: Oh right (laughs).

O: Erm cos it were like (1) It opened at 
about (.) 3/4

R: Yeah

O: And stopped at about 7/6.

R: Ok.

O: 6 or 7 (.) one of them two. (.) And I 
remember about (1) 5 it just went dead so 
((laughs)) me and me mates were (.) running up 
and down school having loads of fun and messing 
about.

R: ((laughs))

O: Had a go on all the activities.

R: (1) And you what sorry?

O: Had a go on all the activities ((laughs)).

R: Ah ok. (1) So what it was on till seven 
but there was nobody there was there not?

O: No.

R: Ok. (.) Ah right well that sounds fun. (.) 
Erm (.) and what was the other time that you 
said?

O: (1) When I were at cross country.

R: Yeah. (.) What was that?

O: (1) Like (2) it (.) just remember all of us 
(1) whet were on bus and just having a mess 
about and all that and then at events we'd do our 
race cos (.) year sevens (.) were first.

R: Oh huh.

O: So I'd end up having a mess about 
then.

R: (2) So were you on a bus going 
somewhere for the

O: Yeah

R: cross country

O: Yeah.

R: Where did you have to go?

O: (1) erm (.) don't know which event it 
were for. (2) I know where places events were at.

R: Yeah.

O: (1) I remember at last event (.) I had to 
take part in year eight's race

R: Oh yeah

O: Cos we arrived late.

R: Oh ok

O: (2) And we thought we'd signed in.

R: ((laughs)) (1) So you had to race against 
the year eights did you?

O: Still came same place.

R: ((laughs)) (.) What position did you
O: Eleven in every single event.
R: (1) You came eleven? (1) Like eleven eleventh?
O: Eleventh.
R: In every single event? (1) (laughs)
O: Yeah. (1) And then this year I came (.) 6 (.) 6 (.) 11.
R: (1) (laughs) (1) Do you think eleven’s your lucky number?
O: I don’t know.
R: (1) (laughs) (4) Ok. (1) Yeah (.) so what about like a (1) cos you’ve told me a lot about this school anyway haven’t you but (1) would there be like a (1) time where you arm (1) that you think’s been really good in this school (.) so far?
O: (1) All of it.
R: (1) Hmm.
O: (3) I think (2) one of me favourite (.) I like (1) just like all of it.
R: (3) What would you say like (.) erm (2) has there been a time that’s been like (.) better than the others?
O: No I’m just enjoying it all (.)
R: (1) Well that’s great.
O: (1) Probably but I liked it (1) I have this (1) probably it’s probably me favourite (.) I was doing football after school (.) in year seven (.) and erm (1) cos there was snow on astro turf. (.) And it were Mr X and in end we ended up playing this other game. (1) We didn’t know what it were like (.) but we had to run from (.) one of (.) one side of pitch to other.
R: Hmm.
O: (1) While all the others were chucking snowballs at us.
R: (1) (laughs) (2) What was good about that then?
O: (1) (laughs) I don’t know I just really liked it.
R: (1) (laughs)
O: Having a mess about and that.
R: (1) So you were allowed to do that then were you?
O: (1) Yeah.
R: (1) (laughs) (.) Was that when it was really snowy?
O: Yeah.
R: Yeah.
O: (1) We’d just got (.) most of snow off of the pitches.
R: Yeah.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>583.</td>
<td>O: So (1) we said we’re still we’re still doing it. (.) And I remember he he picked us and he said (1) erm (.) I’m not telling you what it is but do you wanna take part in this like mini game? (.) And we were all like (.) we don’t know what you mean (1) and he says (.) right we’re doing a game (1) I’m not telling you what it is you’re either doing it or you’re not. (.) And er I ended up (.) saying yeah cos I thought (.) what’s worst thing that can happen like.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>585.</td>
<td>R: ((laughs)) (1) Sounds good yeah cos there was loads of snow wasn’t there earlier in the year.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>587.</td>
<td>O: Yeah. (1) Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>588.</td>
<td>R: (2) Ok. (1) Erm (1) oh yeah cos you all did you say that you liked your maths teacher at your old school?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>589.</td>
<td>O: (3) I can’t remember.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>590.</td>
<td>R: (2) Do you did you like your maths teacher?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>591.</td>
<td>O: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>592.</td>
<td>R: Yeah. (1) What did you like about them?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>593.</td>
<td>O: Just (2) funny. (.) They’d have a laugh mess about with me and all that.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>594.</td>
<td>R: Yeah. (2) Like what kind of thing?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>595.</td>
<td>O: (1) All sorts. (1) Just (2) you’d go in you’d (1) you could have a mess around do whatever as long as you did your work ((laughs)).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>596.</td>
<td>R: Ah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>597.</td>
<td>O: And they’d have a mess about with you.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>598.</td>
<td>R: Ok that’s all right then.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>599.</td>
<td>O: (1) Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600.</td>
<td>R: Were they was that your favourite teacher?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>601.</td>
<td>O: (2) It were either (.) him (.) or my PE teacher.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>602.</td>
<td>R: Mm. (1) What did you like about your PE teacher?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>603.</td>
<td>O: (2) ((laughs)) Just have a mess about with you and all that.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>604.</td>
<td>R: (1) So they were like kinda not too serious?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>605.</td>
<td>O: Yeah (.) like (.) they weren’t serious (.) but they were if you know what I mean?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>606.</td>
<td>R: Yeah. (2) And is there any teachers like</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
that here?

607. O: (1) Yeah. (2) Pretty much all of ‘em ((laughs))
608. R: Are they?
609. O: (.) Yeah Mr X he’ll have a mess about with you. (1) He always does ((laughs)). (.) Mr X he’ll have a mess about with you as long as you stay on right side of him.
610. R: [Ok]
611. O: A lot of me teachers are like that.
612. R: (.) SO you like them all.
613. O: Yeah.
614. R: That’s good. (3) Erm (5) yeah cos we were talking about er (1) like your mum and dad and things as well (1) erm (3) and er (3) like cos you went on twilight first didn’t you?
615. O: Yeah.
616. R: What do you think they thought about that about you being on that twilight?
617. O: (1) Er (4) I don’t think either of them really liked it [I don’t think]
618. R: mm hmm
619. O: any of us liked it cos (1) my mum kept saying how (.) how much she didn’t (.) like it cos obviously (.) I miss out on me learning it’s (1) not easy for her.
620. R: Yeah.
621. O: Cos I can’t even walk it home like, incase I bump into any (1) that. (1) Me dad (1) he didn’t like it cos I were missing out on me learning.
622. R: Mmm
623. O: I mean (.) I’d be getting back (1) and (1) if (1) he’d pop through (.) to see me at dinner (.) on when he were on his (.) and he’d always come and he’d write me like loads of maths questions cos (2) it gave me summation to do or he’d give me a challenge to do for when he gets home.
624. R: (3) Right. (2) So he was having to or like give you work to do.
625. O: Yeah.
626. R: (.) Yeah.
627. O: (1) And (1) ended up having to and then I ended up (1) going to tutoring service.
628. R: (1) Oh yeah.
629. O: Just so I didn’t (1) cos I didn’t want me learning and that to drop down.
630. R: (3) And what did you do there then?
631. O: Erm they basically (2) they’re basically tutors. (1) You do it all on laptops and that they’ll set you work and (.) that.
632. O: And (1) you get (1) they even give you homework which I (.) get home and do it straight away. Erm (.) so yeah. I’d be doing that I’d either do that (1) between ‘em (.) so like (. .) I’d go in (1) to school and come out I’d go to Xtutoring service (. .) I’d then go to school (1)
633. R: Mm hmm
634. O: again. ( .) I’d then do it after sch er ( .)
I’ve done me two hours.
635. R: ( .) Yeah.
636. O: (2) Yeah. (2) And found that really good cos I mean (1) it (1) it helped me to not drop ( .)
me standards cos I mean ( .) cos it’s not exactly ( .) easy work they’re doing and it’s one to one.
637. R: Mm hmm
638. O: You get a lot more done and it (1) comes a lot more easier so (1) I mean I went (1)
only thing I were in top set for at me old school (1) were ( .) maths (.) which and PE. (1) Whereas now I’m top set for everything.
639. R: (1) That’s good and do you think that that’s like (.) partly because of the Xtutoring service.
640. O: Yeah.
641. R: stuff?
642. O: (2) I got me dad to keep number cos I said if I ever feel like I’m dropping down I’m gonna go straight back there cos of how much they’ve helped me.
643. O: That’s good then. (1) How long did you go there for?
644. O: Erm (.) entire time I were on twilight.
645. R: Aah. ( .) Whose idea was it then ( .) to do that?
646. O: (1) Me auntie’s.
647. R: Oh right. (2) Why what did she say?
648. O: She said erm ( .) we’ve found you this place ( .) that you can go to ( .) so you’re not losing out on your learning and that and she goes (1) you don’t have to go if you don’t want to but ( .) try it once cos (1) I thought (1) I may as well try it.
649. R: Mm hmm
650. O: (1) So I tried it and all that and it ( .)
turned out really (. .) good so I said I wanna keep going. (1) But you also got prizes and that ( .)
when you (1) cos I like I think it were ( .) every four times you went you ( .) got a prize (2) cos I were going five times a week.
651. O: (1) No (1) or you got (2) little (2)
trying to think how to describe (1) got like (. .)
652. O: (1) like (1) no (1) er you got (2) little (2)

---

grateful

"look how bad the teaching was"

Proud of self
I'll show them
I want to prove myself
Determined Conscientious
I am mature motivated
School doesn't belong
Sense of achievement
Wants to prove self

narrative or himself

I'll give it a go
Determined
Sense of achievement
Felt valued

---

175
could be owt could be rubbers
653.  R: Ah right.
654.  O: could be pens (.) could be like little soft toys.
655.  R: (2) Well that's good. (1) So did you get some?
656.  O: Yeah. (1) I've erm I got two footballs.
(1) I And I still play with 'em now.
657.  R: (laughs)
658.  O: I've got (.) I've picked two like ice lolly rubbers (.) I've still got 'em in my stationary kit.
659.  R: (laughs) Have you. (1) And was the (.) did you always see like one (.) teacher or were there different ones?
660.  O: (1) It were always same person. (1) But cos I also (.) did it through Christmas (1) at Christmas they'd give you like (.) these (1) like santa hats (.) and some of the stuff you know said Merry Christmas and that.
661.  R: That's good. (.) So you did it through the holidays?
662.  O: (1) Yeah.
663.  R: (1) Did you not mind doing it in the holidays?
664.  O: No. (1) Cos I know it'd benefit me in the long run.
665.  R: That's good and was it every day in the holidays?
666.  O: (1) No not every day.
667.  R: Mmm.
668.  O: (1) Cos (.) I want to play out and that with me mates.
669.  R: Mmm.
670.  O: Cos
671.  R: You've gotta have a break at Christmas.
672.  O: Yeah.
673.  R: Did you still go four times a week?
674.  O: (1) About.
675.  R: Mm hmm. (.) Maybe a bit less [in the hol]"
682.  O: (2) My mum still don't like fact I go to this school.
683.  R: Mmm.
684.  O: (1) But (2) like I say to her (1) it's (.) my decision (.) It's not her whose in school for five years is it. (.) Whereas me dad (1) my dad's happy cos he can see how much progress I've made. (2) From obviously being at Xold school to how I am now. (.) I mean (2) I go out with a lot more people round here now and I do a lot more things. (1) I mean (2) half of kids who I meet with now (.) I wouldn't have known if I'd never made (.) that mistake (.) I made a mistake.
685.  R: Mm hmm. (2) Yeah. (.) And erm (1) does your dad live round here did you say?
686.  O: He lives down Xplace.
687.  R: Oh right. (1) So (.) when your'e at your dads do you see people from school?
688.  O: Yeah.
689.  R: Mm hmm. (1) What about when you're at your mum's?
690.  O: (2) Erm (2) I'll catch bus with 'em (.) to like Xtown and that (1) after school. (1) But other than that I don't see 'em out (.) side. (2) There's a lass that (.) was in my year who I talk to a bit (.) who goes and we'll catch bus together and that.
691.  R: When you're at your mum's you do?
692.  O: Yeah.
693.  R: What do they come to this school or
694.  O: (1) They come to this school.
695.  R: Oh right so they live a little bit further away.
696.  O: (2) They live in Xarea as well.
697.  R: Where your mum lives?
698.  O: Yeah.
699.  R: Oh ok. (1) Well that's alright then at least there's someone there.
700.  O: Yeah.
701.  R: Mm hmm. (2) Ok. (.) Erm (2) so do you think they're pleased with how everything's going your mum and dad?
702.  O: Me dad is I don't think me mum is though.
703.  R: What makes you think that?
704.  O: Because she's just (.) I don't think she's happy with school choice.
705.  R: Mmm
706.  O: Which (.) school I've gone to cos I it's not (.) practical for (.) anyone in me family for if I'm poorly or owt. (1) But like I've always said to if I'm poorly (2) just (.) ring me dad up (1) and I don't worry about me.
mean (. ) if I’m poorly if not (. ) just tell school to let me walk it and I’ll walk it down to me dad’s.  
178  
707.  R: Mm hmm.  
708.  O: If not (. ) and if I can’t walk it to me dad’s (. ) I’ll ring somebody up and get me aunty X or whoever to come through and pick me up.  
709.  R: (2) Yeah. (2) I suppose you’re not poorly that much anyway are you?  
710.  O: Mmmm (1) I were sick on Tuesday.  
711.  R: Were you?  
712.  O: (2) Yeah but I didn’t get sent home.  
713.  R: (1) Are you feeling better?  
714.  O: (1) Yeah but I’ve had a cold for a while.  
715.  R: Ah,  
716.  O: I literally just got rid of it (1) in time to just (. ) for me football training (. ) yesterday.  
717.  R: Ah (1) is that here that you do that (1) the football?  
718.  O: No (2) I play for Xteam  
719.  R: Ah right.  
720.  O: In (1) at winter we train at Xtown (1) cos they have (2) an astro turf.  
721.  R: Yeah,  
722.  O: Whereas in winter (. ) I train (. ) any other time [but in winter]  
723.  R: [Yeah]  
724.  O: I train at Xplace.  
725.  R: Ah,  
726.  O: At we play us games (.) home games at Xplace.  
727.  R: (1) Who got you into that then?  
728.  O: Football?  
729.  R: Mm hmm.  
730.  O: (2) I’ve just always been into it but  
731.  R: Yeah  
732.  O: I jointed (. ) that team (1) it started off as Xteam but they changed the name (2) am so (2) but it were me mum who got me into football into that team.  
733.  R: Mm hmm.  
734.  O: (1) She were one who found out about it and said (1) I’ve found this team for you (. ) would you like to join it. (.) And I goes (1) I’ll give it a shot. (1) And I mean I’ve stuck with it for a fair bit now ((laughs)))  
735.  R: ((laughs)) (2) How long have you been there?  
736.  O: (2) I wouldn’t know.  
737.  R: A long time?  
738.  O: Er (1) over a year.  
739.  R: Mm hmm (. ) And you like it.
179

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>740.</td>
<td>O: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>741.</td>
<td>R: So (.) the kids who are on that team (.) do any of them come to this school?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>742.</td>
<td>O: No.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>743.</td>
<td>R: (2) What school do they go to?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>744.</td>
<td>O: (1) Xschool.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>745.</td>
<td>R: Oh ((laughs)).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>746.</td>
<td>O: A lot of 'em either go to Xschool (1) Xschool (1) or somewhere else.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>747.</td>
<td>R: Ok. (1) And are you friends with them?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>748.</td>
<td>O: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>749.</td>
<td>R: (3) Do you see them like (1) outside of football or only when you play football?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>750.</td>
<td>O: Only when I play football.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>751.</td>
<td>R: Ok. (.) What is it that you like about (.) about that er (1) playing for that team then?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>752.</td>
<td>O: Just (2) I don't know I just really like it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>753.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm. (2) Is it once a week?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>754.</td>
<td>O: (2) Training's once a week.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>755.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>756.</td>
<td>O: And you normally play (.) and you (.) play your games on Sundays.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>757.</td>
<td>R: Ah right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>758.</td>
<td>O: But when (.) we're not having a we didn't have a game last week (.) and we're not having a game this week.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>759.</td>
<td>R: Ah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>760.</td>
<td>O: Us next (1) games not till this Sunday but nest Sunday.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>761.</td>
<td>R: Ah ok.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>762.</td>
<td>O: And that's because I've got ??? cup.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>763.</td>
<td>R: (1) Ah right ok. (1) So you've got a (.). you've got two free weekends.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>764.</td>
<td>O: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>765.</td>
<td>R: ((laughs)) (2) Is that good or bad?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>766.</td>
<td>O: (5) I hate it (.) I just (.) cos I'll wake cos I'm used to waking up (.) not early early but earlyish for me football. (1) I'll (1) just (.) don't like not having it you know.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>767.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>768.</td>
<td>O: It feels weird (.) waking up on a Sunday (.) but not going to a [football]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>769.</td>
<td>R: [Yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>770.</td>
<td>O: Match.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>771.</td>
<td>R: Yeah (.) you like to get up and go.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>772.</td>
<td>O: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>773.</td>
<td>R: What will you do instead? Do you think?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>774.</td>
<td>O: (1) Go out with the mates (.) for longer. I mean. (.) I would do me football match (.) and like (.) I'll tell 'em what time kick off is (.) and they'll guess when about I finish (.) and second I'm in car (.) I'll just look at my phone and I'll end...</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
up ringing ‘em all saying I’m on me way I’m on me way don’t worry.

775. R: (laugh) (1) Well at least you’ll still see them (2) yeah.

776. O: yeah.

777. R: (1) Erm (4) lets see what else I was gonna ask you about. (1) Erm ( ) oh yeah. (1) You said that you thought it was stricter here than your old school?

778. O: Yeah.

779. R: What did I was just wondering if you can tell me a bit more about that.

780. O: (1) At me old school (.) you could literally make as much noise as you want moving and you didn’t have to be single file you could walk wherever. (.) Here like you have to be on (1) left hand side single file and silent. (2) And then (1) there (1) second you you (.) could (1) you could do owt. (2) And (1) and (1) if (1) you could literally do owt (1) and most likely you wouldn’t get a warning or owt. (1) I mean you could mess about and that. (1) You could do whatever and you wouldn’t get owt where as here (1) it’s (.) plus I think this school is a lot more organized (.) cos they have obviously time limits and that. (.) Whereas at old school they’d be like oh yeah do this stick it (.) and just put your pen down when you’re done. (.) So you’d have kids there taking half an hour just to write one word (1) cos they were (.) just messing about and that so you didn’t get as much learning done.

781. R: (1) Yeah. (1) What do you mean the time limits?

782. O: (1) Like (1) say you’re writing your date and title (.) they’ll give you like a minute for that. You do buzz and go which is (.) when you pass it round your table so you’ll have (.) you’ll have (.) either a minute a minute thirty seconds and fifteen. (1) Or two two minutes (1) a minute (.) thirty fifteen.

783. R: (2) Right.

784. O: So you have (2) you get given time to do it instead of (1) oh let us know when you’ve done.

785. R: (2) Do you think that’s better then?

786. O: Yeah.

787. R: (1) Why do you think it’s better?

788. O: (2) Because it’s just (1) feels a lot more organized plus (1) it feels like it’s more challenging so like if you get if you (.) it’s like getting told (1) write (.) summat (.) in a week (2) it’s not gonna be as challenging if you get told to...
789. R: Yeah. (1) And I suppose it like makes you do it.
790. O: Yeah.
791. R: (1) Erm what's buzz and go?
792. O: Buzz and go it's like (1) you're sat on a ta- right there's normally four people on a table (1) so you have a person here here here and here.
793. R: Mm hmm
794. O: (1) So (1) you'll have your whiteboards out and you'll (1) get given like (1) questions or summat to write about. (1) It's basically similar to four times better. (1) And you get top (1) like say two minutes to write (1) you get two minutes to write on your own. (1) Then you swap it give it to next person who has a minute to write on yours. (1) Then (1) next person has 30 seconds (1) then (1) person after that has 15 (1) and then you get you write one back. (1) But (1) so you write on everybody's whiteboards. (1) And the four times better is (1) same apart from you get the same time.
795. R: Right (1) and what so are you all writing about the same thing?
796. O: Unless it's questions.
797. R: Ok. (1) And is it quite fun doing that?
798. O: Yeah.
799. R: (1) Sounds good do you do that in all lessons?
800. O: (1) Yeah.
801. R: Mmm hmm (2) What about the walking in silence and all that then what do you think about that?
802. O: (3) I don't mind it really cos like (2) it (1) it just (2) it's like when you're walking in the street (1) you don't have to talk walking do you. (1) Looks a lot more organizes and (1) better. (1) Only problem is (1) if you're late to lesson then (1) you'll get shouted at (1) even when you could have someone that's in front of you whose walking right slow (1) but it's not your fault.
803. R: Mmm.
804. O: Summat else I don't understand (1) you can be late to school but you can't be late to your lesson. (1) Cos you have to be in school for twenty past even though your lesson doesn't start till twenty-five past.
805. R: (2) What happens if you're late for your lesson?
806. O: (1) You get an EL.
807. R: (3) What's that?
O: (1) You have like (.) EL one
809. R: Mm hm.
810. O: EL two EL three. (1) EL one’s like your
first one EL two’s your second one and
811. R: Ah
812. O: if you get an EL three it (.) it’s
reallocation and a detention after school. (1) if
you don’t go to that reallocation you think (.) you
get (.) next day (.) is in cons.
813. R: (2) Does that happen very much with
you then?
814. O: No (2) think I’ve only ever got like (.)
one or two EL’s.
815. R: That’s good.
816. O: And I’ve never got ((laughs)) onto EL
two’s only EL one.
817. R: How do you feel about (.) about that
then about not getting any?
818. O: (3) Happy.
819. R: (3) Did you use to have that kinda thing
in your old school?
820. O: (1) Er yeah you’d get like (.) Warning
one warning two warning three. (.) Whereas only
difference is if you got a warning three here (.)
you’d get put in isolation.
821. R: Mm hm.
822. O: And you’d (.) have an (.) your hour
extra in isolation.
823. R: (4) So you didn’t use to get (.) erm (.)
any of that in your old school did you not?
824. O: No.
825. R: Either.
826. O: But I prefer (.) way it is here cos you’re
still getting to do your lessons. (.) Cos I mean like
in there you could get it first lesson (.) you’d miss
your next four lessons. (.) Whereas here (.) you
say you get it lesson one you still get to do your
other four lessons.
827. R: (1) And then when do you have your
isolation?
828. O: (1) Er (.) you (.) you have your (.)
detention
829. R: Oh ok
830. O: but if you don’t go to your detention (.)
that’s when you have to do your isolation.
831. R: Ah. And how long’s the isolation?
832. O: Erm (1) say (.) an hour longer than
school. (1) [So]
833. R: [Right]
834. O: (1) It’s about (.) seven hours I think.
835. R: Ok is it? So you’ve got a full day.
836. O: Yeah I think it is.
R: But you've not done it before.
O: (2) It's about (1) it's about an hour.
R: Right.
O: It’s seven hours after (.) about seven hours is doing iso.
R: (.) Ok. (1) Erm (4) yeah you were saying about erm (4) when you (2) or the teachers here about how you feel they're more encouraging (.) I think you said that. (.) Erm and I was wondering if you could just (.) tell me a bit more about (.) that.
O: They won't just let you give up on first hurdle. (.) Like (.) if you were to say oh I don't get it I don't get it they'll come and help you.
R: Mm hmm.
O: And (.) they’ll (.) encourage you to do it more. (1) They’re more encourage and (2) more (.) like at old school if you didn't understand summar you just got told to ask your (.) partner next to you. (.) If they didn't know just sit and wait
R: Mm hmm.
R: (.) Can you think of a time where it's happened (1) that (.) you've felt like the teachers are encouraging you here like a (.) an example?
O: (4) German. (1) When I (.) my first few weeks of German (.) cos I was (.) six months behind everybody else. (1) I just (1) couldn't find point in doing it cos I mean (.) I were doing completely different languages at me old school (.) I kept getting all the languages mixed up and that.
R: (.) Yeah.
O: Whereas then they helped (.) me
R: (.) Where did they teacher do that was helpful?
O: (1) Encouraged me helped me a lot and just (2) like if he saw my hand up he always said (.) if you need (.) if you're struggling just put your hand up but if you're really struggling put your (1) planner on red and arm up. (.) Cos then I'll come to you near enough straight away.
R: Ah right put your planner on what?
O: Red.
R: Ah
O: Cos you have traffic light colours you have (.) when you go in you have to put your planner on amber (2) if you're struggling you (.) you normally put your arm up or (.) flip it on red. (1) And (.) you don’t normally use green but (1) if he asks you to (.) they'll sometimes ask you (.) show me how you're feeling (.) and that's when

Supportive teachers
I am clever
I might need help
Sometimes - that's ok
Old school - not so supportive

answers immediately
reflects on past attitude
consciousness
mature - recognising weakness
grateful
Good relationship
Support from staff
Mutual respect
Clear systems
allow him to feel achievement
you'll show red amber and green.

857. R: {1} Oh right that's interesting. {1} Do you think?
858. O: {1} You know {1} you show your colours show how you're feeling in maths.
859. R: Right. {1} Like if you feel like you understand it or not?
860. O: Yeah.
861. R: And what happens if you put it on red what will they do?
862. O: {1} In {1} I'll use maths as an example {1} if you're on red {1} Miss'll normally get everybody on red to sit in a certain table or area. {1} If there is only four of you {1} she'll {1} you'll all sit on a table together {1} she'll work you all on but if you're on amber {1} you then start question {1} one {1} and if you're on {1} green {1} you'll start on question five {1} four or five {1} depending how easy they are.
863. R: {1} Ah right. {1} And do you think that's a good idea?
864. O: Yeah.
865. R: Mm hmmm.
866. O: Cos then {1} cos you could be doing summat {1} finding it right easy {1} and still have to go from question one. {1} Cos then you but then you're not challenging yourself as much {1} are you?
867. R: {1} And it's important for you to challenge yourself you would say?
869. R: Mm hmmm. {1} So do you {1} what what colour's yours normally on?
870. O: {1} Amber or green.
871. R: Mm hmmm.
872. O: I don't think I've ever put it on red.
873. R: What what would happen if everyone put it on red?
874. O: Miss would run through it.
875. R: Haha.
876. O: {1} {1} laaghs) It once had it where most people had their planner on red {1} and miss erm thingy {1} Miss X {1} she ran through {1} it again {1} she first {1} second question with us again again. {1} And then she said if you still don't understand and then {1} cos like when explained it to most of people {1} she then said if erm {1} you still don't understand it {1} put your arm up {1} and it were
only about handful of people that still didn't understand it.
879. R: (laughs) Oh well that's OK then (laughs). (2)Ok (.) Erm (5) yeah you were (.) you were talking about or (2) when you first came here you said you thought you were like (.) sort of the talk of the class. (1)
880. O: Yeah.
881. R: Yeah (.) I was just wondering what you meant (.) by that really.
882. O: Like (.) I think it (.) happens to everybody you know when you're new kid in class
883. R: Yeah.
884. O: I think (.) ev- like (.) everybody's just (.) watching you and seeing what you're like and (1) you know all that and everybody's (.) talking about you and all (.) that. (3)
885. R: Mm hmm (2) How did that make you feel (1) knowing that (1) that was going on?
886. O: (1) I really weren't bothered just thought (1) act myself cos then (1) I can't get said I'm a liar and pretending to be summat other than (1) like (.) I'd rather be friends
887. R: Mm hmm
888. O: Like (.) be friends with somebody (.) cos (1) cos of who I am not cos of who they think I am.
889. R: (2) So (.) what do you (1) do you think they thought anything?
890. O: (2) I don't know what they (.) I don't know.
891. R: Yeah. (2) But you made friends quickly though didn't you?
892. O: Yeah.
893. R: (1) Mm hmm. (1) And do you think like (.) it was them (1) you were the talk of the class (.) cos that could be could or bad really can't it.
894. O: Depends what it's about.
895. R: Yeah. (1) So how do you think it was do you think it was in a good way or (2)
896. O: I think it (2) it's like (1) not a good way but it's not a bad way it's like (.) everybody just being curious cos like it's like (1) it's like (.) a new kid at any school (1) if I mean if a new kid came my (1) in my lesson (2) everybody'd be like (.) oh who's he who's he or (.) this that (.) and but everybody tries making you feel welcomed and that and tries introducing themselves.
897. R: (1) That's good. (1) So people have been (.) erm trying to make you feel welcome have they? (1) I suppose not now cos you've been here (a while)
O: [(laughs)] not now] yeah
R: [(laughs)] What did they do to try and make you feel welcome?

O: (2) They explained everything to me. (.) But I remember (2) I got my (1) time (.) my first time to- my own timetable my second day (.) and luckily enough I heard some of lads (.) talking about having PE next day so I thought (1) I got home and I said dad can I take my PE kit cos I think (1) some of lads have got (.) I've heard some of lads talking about how they've got PE tomorrow so I'm thinking if I've got it. (.) And erm (.) I ended up with me own timetable (1) I'd always meet up with older lads cos (1) they were only ones I knew. (1) And I started (.) with more and more of me lessons. Erm (.) I'd get curious cos I'd start talking so I've ended up in (1) with friendship in friendship group I'm in now.

R: (1) So people would start talking to you, would they from your year group?

O: Yeah.
R: (1) So how did you know the older (.) people?

O: (1) Erm (1) I knew (1) some (.) I knew (1) I either knew 'em through (1) friends that are older (1) cos I've got (.) there's some lads on my (.) street (1) that (.) I've always played with [so I]

R: [Mm hmm]

O: I'll (.) if I go anywhere (.) it'll be with them and that. (1) So (.) they then introduced me to their friends.

R: Mm hmm

O: So I then knew all (.) them and their friends. (.) So they were ones I were hanging out with.

R: (1) Right. (1) So then when you started here (1) they were the only ones you knew.

O: Yeah.
R: And did they (1) what did they do when you got here?

O: (2) They were all (2) just (.) really (1) they'd talk with me and that we'd all have a mess about (.) cos and (.) I'd walk it home with 'em.

R: That's good. (1) Do you still see them?

O: Yeah.
R: (2) What year are they in?

O: (1) Er (2) ten (1) wait I've got (1) one in eleven (1) two in ten (2) one in year nine.

R: OK (1) but mainly in your year now would you say or

O: Most of me friends are in my year now.
R: Yeah. (2) Ok (.) or (1) well that sounds
all really good I think that was all that I wanted to
ask you really extra (.) Do you think there’s
anything else (.) that I haven’t asked that you
think (.) ern you wanna tell me about?

920. O: Mmm not that I can think of.
921. R: (.) OK (.) I’m gunna (.) stop this.
c. **Sarah Interview with analysis**

![Transcript and Analysis Table]

1. R: Ok so just start from wherever you think is best in terms of the SWAP experience.
2. S: First of all I’ll apologise in case I get the *erm* ( ) wording wrong on the processes
3. R: Yeah no that’s fine, that’s fine
4. S: Yeah, so initially Owen was ( ) is it excluded for 3 days?
5. R: Right
6. S: Urm ( ) and then he was going back into ( ) school
7. R: Mmm hmm
8. S: Urm (3) some children recorded a video (1) and I got assured that ( ) what punishment had been put in place ( ) would still stand so that were the exclusion
9. R: Mmm hmm
10. S: Er ( ) that came from Xold teacher 1 ( ) Xold teacher 1 ( ) *erm* showed it to somebody else and they said no, Owen had to go. So we’d got staff members and his head of year 7 saying that no, what’s in place will remain in place ( ) but then they did a *U*-turn and he had to leave.
11. R: So what was that in place did you mean?
12. S: He was only being excluded from school for 3 days
13. R: Oh right. Ok.
14. S: And they said that he’d be returning to that school.
15. R: Mmm hmm
16. S: The day that he told us there was some form of meeting, but the school said that they didn’t have the time to get the paperwork ( ) ready and in. Well (1) to me, that’s wrong
17. R: [mmm]
18. S: they could have notified and tried ( ) somebody else. They could have delegated
19. R: [mmm]
20. S: in fairness ( ) and ( ) that’s kinda (1) like November time (1) so (1) because they didn’t have the time for the ( ) for the paperwork and for the meeting (1) *erm* Owen could then only go to school ( ) for two hours a day
21. R: [Mmm hmm]
22. S: Erm ( ) that’s one hour in morning one hour in afternoon.
23. R: and was that at the original...
24. S: That’s at the original school.
25. R: What school was that again?
27. R: Mm hmm (1) so he could only go ( ) er for an hour in the morning ( ) and an hour in the afternoon.
28. S: Yep. That’s right. Yeah. They weren’t setting proper ( ) school work
29. R: [Mm hmm]
30. S: What work he did wasn’t getting marked (2) and (1) this went on ( ) up until ( ) Christmas. (2) So his schooling suffered ( ) cos obviously he weren’t there. Erm he was sat ( ) placed outside in a corridor ( ) so all the children could see him if were the break times and stuff (1) it wasn’t to me (1)
   (completely thought about)
31. R: [Mmm]
32. S: (2) there were times he would turn up and the staff members weren’t there
33. R: [Right]
34. S: or, he couldn’t leave cos he had to wait for the staff members
35. R: [Mm hmm]
36. S: It were just
37. R: So this was after he’d been excluded then or ( ) what was going on?
38. S: (1) He ??? I don’t know if that’s the correct word he were basically not allowed in school for 3 days
39. R: [Yeah] for 3 days
40. S: and then obviously to go back in
41. R: Yeah
42. S: But because (1) they’ve got a duty of (1) kinda ( ) schooling him
43. R: [Yeah (1) see]
44. S: he were put on twilight is it
45. R: [Right OK (1) yeah]
46. S: until another school (1) could be found
47. R: Ok
48. S: But the day I remember obviously I got told they were having that meeting that night
49. R: [Right]
50. S: they said they didn’t have time to sort the paperwork out. Well surely they could have passed that on at a later stage
51. R: [Mm hmm]
52. S: something could have been done. It could have been raised surely
53. R: [Yeah]
54. S: To me at that point
55. R: [Yeah]
56. S: Instead of waiting (1) a good month maybe 6 weeks
57. R: [Mm hmmm]
58. S: For another meeting.
59. R: Mm hmm
60. S: Sp from from my (.) from a parents perspective (1) saying that that's the only punishment that he's coming back in to then being kicked out of school (1) I don't think that's acceptable
61. R: No
62. S: That's false promises false hopes
63. R: Yeah
64. S: It's ending the matter- well it's not. Owen got (.) obviously humiliated from that then happening
65. R: [mrm]
66. S: he lost (1) he didn't (.) get in touch with his friends
67. R: Right
68. S: Erm (1) because the school went on a witch hunt (1) having every back in (.) to find out about this video (1) that had been recorded
69. R: Ok
70. S: So it was all to protect the school not to protect (.) to look at the pupils
71. R: Yeah
72. S: It was to protect the school
73. R: Mm hmmm. So (3) he was initially excluded for 3 days (1) and then he came back in and he was on this twilight. Is that right?
74. S: It was something like that yeah. He definitely did the twilight twice a day.
75. R: And at that time when he was doing this twilight how long did that go on for?
76. S: (3) over (4) over a month
77. R: Was it. And so he wasn't accessing full days
78. S: [yeah]
79. R: for a good while
80. S: yeah and they were giving him it wasn't enough I'm just trying to have a look
81. R: Mm hmmm
82. S: (14) I think (.) the incident happened
83. R: mm
84. S: (2) erm (2) either before october half term
85. R: yeah
86. S: or just after
87. R: right ok
88. S: so e-ether way (.) you're talking a g- a good few weeks
89. R: yeah yeah (1) ok then. (1) And so when he
had that initial 3 day exclusion (.) what did school say to you about it did they (.) was it that
90. S: It’s another matter
91. R: right
92. S: (2) and I’ll be honest (1) I got sent the video
93. R: oh did you
94. S: [and] (1) I took it to the school
95. R: right
96. S: I blame myself I wish I hadn’t have done
97. R: mm
98. S: because I wouldn’t have liked it
99. R: mm mm
100. S: it’s not because it were just my son
101. R: yeah
102. S: so I took it to the school
103. R: [yep]
104. S: and they reassured me that there were no repercussions (.) what they did with Owen stands and he goes back to normal
105. R: [yeah]
106. S: well (.) they lied
107. R: So when did you find out then?
108. S: (2) about the video?
109. R: or (.) that that he was going to be (1) you know going on a swap
110. S: (2) erm (1) a day or two after I showed the video
111. R: Right
112. S: it were never (2) when he went in he were in inclusion he might not have been excluded he might have just been in inclusion
113. R: [yeah, yeah]
114. S: if that makes sense
115. R: yeah yeah
116. S: but erm then erm (.) that’s they did they turn he were never allowed to go back into lets say mainstream school
117. R: mm. Right
118. S: but (1) if I hadn’t of shown that video
119. R: mm hmm
120. S: it’d have been different wouldn’t it because they weren’t aware that it (1) had been posted out there
121. R: So what was er on the video then?
122. S: Erm (1) the (.) bit it showed basically (1) erm (2) when Owen was in primary school across the road (1) he’d been
bullied by this child

123. R: Right
124. S: Not saying nice things
125. R: [right]
126. S: calling him gay boy
127. R: [yeah]
128. S: puff boy (. ) erm (. ) he’s a waste of space
129. R: [yeah]
130. S: a waste of air, he should be dead (. ) why are you living (. ) you’re not worth living.
131. R: Mm hmm
132. S: All these things went on
133. R: Mm Hmm
134. S: In primary school
135. R: [mm hmm mm hmm]
136. S: they didn’t even pass a record (. ) over to (. )
137. R: Mm hmm
138. S: to keep ‘em apart (1) so from (. ) listening to what (. ) went off, this child had gone around telling people that (. ) he’d fought my son and that he’d won (1) he’s (1) he’s racist he’s gay, he’s puff (. ) all these things were coming back. Came back in (1) and (1) unfortunately (. ) my son lost it.
139. R: [mmm]
140. S: they (1) they ended up scrapping
141. R: and this was the same boy?
142. S: this were the same boy
143. R: Mm hm
144. S: so they end up scrapping (. ) but (2) it it were worse than that because (. ) erm (. ) he was being egged on (1) to go back and (1) hit him while he was down which he did do (. ) but he didn’t just hit him. He kicked him in the head
145. R: right
146. S: (1) and it weren’t a nice kick
147. R: yes [4] mm hmm. And that was on the video.
148. S: That was (. ) on the video. It turns out I only got a shortend
149. R: [right]
150. S: version of the video
151. R: Yeah
152. S: er (. ) the school managed to get the (1) full length video
153. R: Ok, Mm hmm. Ok
154. S: So he (1) had to (. ) go
155. R: Right
156. S: which (1) how on earth school

192
didn't (. ) know about it prior (1) and (. ) I think the school were more annoyed that I managed to get hold of it (trusts the school but the don't show it back) (1) but I di-to me I did the right thing by letting the school aware (1) but then it turned into a big witch hunt.

157. R: [mm]
158. S: which weren't easing up because they pulled absolutely everybody (. ) and they questioned and questioned and questioned. And I wouldn't tell them the source cos they did it in confidence.
159. R: [OK]
160. S: and they didn't want me to know and it came from a pupil
161. R: yeah yeah
162. S: erm (. ) my words to xold teacher 1 is (. ) it doesn't matter where it's come from (. ) we (. ) we've (. ) it's here
163. R: [yeah]
164. S: so we know there's one (. ) and that (. ) I'm showing you
165. R: yeah
166. S: and yeah no no further action were taken (. ) but he did. They did. So why promise something me (. )
167. R: [to keep him in school]
168. S: they said that he'd stay in school yeah.
170. S: Well, I'll be honest with you (. ) it weren't a nice vid- it weren't nice
171. R: [mm hmm]
172. S: and I can recall (. ) erm (. ) the (1) the noise that it made (1) er (. ) the child go to hospital just to be checked out
173. R: [yeah]
174. S: yes I'm aware police could have been called (speaking to authority figure?) (. ) I'm fully aware of all this (. ) but (. ) the school saying he's a remarkable student and he's bright and everything else, they'd put things in place so is it 'Minds' (. ) the- they'd got various things set up for Owen (. ) knowing his emotional state
175. R: [mm mm]
176. S: [hh] yeah
177. R: Mm hmm
178. S: So they got all these things set up
179. R: [yeah]
180. S: Willing to (1) help Owen (.) they identified problems. to as a problem (2) and (1) it’s (.) obviously (1) that’s where it ends really.
181. R: Mm hmm
182. S: Erm
183. R: And this was all at Xold school school.
184. S: This was at Xold school yeah.
185. R: Yep.
186. S: Phoning up to try and find out if a meeting’s taking place because we’re going into (. ) Christmas holidays ( . ) err ( . ) cos ( . ) they br- they Xold school actually broke up
187. R: Mm hmm
188. S: And I’d heard nothing
189. R: Right...
190. S: Ddin’t even know
191. R: and were you thinking he was staying there at this point?
192. S: Well I didn’t know where he needed to be.
193. R: You didn’t know.
194. S: I mean on 27th December (.) not knowing where your child
195. R: [yeah]
196. S: should be schooling (.) and if he’s going to a new school he’s gonna want a uniform
197. R: [yeah]
198. S: how on earth do you sort that out
199. R: course
200. S: (2) and that that’s how it was.
201. R: yeah. (1) this is all really (1) useful to know ( . ) ermm ( . ) so then ( . ) after you sh- after they’d seen this video (1) what (1) how did it come about that (1) ermm (1) it was a possibility for him to move schools? What did school say to you?
202. S: Well when I showed the video Xold teacher 1 said Owen would still remain in the
203. R: Mm hmm
204. S: whatever punishment they gave him ( . ) that remained the same that would not ( . ) there were no further action would be taken.
205. R: yeah
206. S: But he said Xold teacher 2 says ( . ) he cannot stay.
207. R: Ok. (2) and who was that the head
teacher or...?

| 208. | S: No () not a head teacher. |
| 209. | R: Right (1) just someone else in school. |
| 211. | R: and is that all you were told? |
| 212. | S: Yeah that he had to go and that he was going on twilight and () obviously (1) |
| 213. | R: Yeah |
| 214. | S: But the work the he were being given to do () it weren't proper school work, the teachers weren't making the work |
| 215. | R: Yeah |
| 216. | S: It were like () an inconvenience () to the school. |
| 217. | R: Right. And this was for about a month would you say? |
| 218. | S: A month or more. Yeah |
| 219. | R: [or more] Ok. (4) How do you think Owen was feeling about it all? |

| 220. | S: Owen () erm () said to be handle it well () there were times obviously () it must have been hard for him cos he's sitting in corridor seeing friends being asked questions |
| 221. | R: [mm hmm] |
| 222. | S: er () listening to conversations that's going on (1) it's (3) I recon he () he put on a show. |
| 223. | R: Yeah (1). To pretend he was OK you mean or..? |
| 224. | S: Yeah. |
| 225. | R: (4) and would he say anything to you sort of at the end of the day or () did you kind of () feel that he wasn't OK or (2) |
| 226. | S: Erm () he used to say that he he'd seen () people and they're asking him and that he's having to sit outside and that it's breakime () or he were entitled to his dinner () cos he get free school meals () erm he have to be escorted everywhere () or Owen decided not to () and he () he kinda (2) I'm not say () we'll say () became (2) withdrawn () within himself. Like I said () he end up cutting () contact () from his friends (2). He become isolated. To a degree. |
| 227. | R: Yeah. After the incident. |
| 228. | S: Yeah. Even now. |
| 229. | R: Yeah. (4) Mm hmmm. (10). And all this stuff and all that kind of thing did anything happen with that? Did he kind of get any involvement? |

X'mental health service
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Transcript</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>230.</td>
<td>S: [Yeah] Yer he he got an appointment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>231.</td>
<td>R: Ok.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>232.</td>
<td>S: and I I were in touch with and they says 'well if he goes to second choice school or school (1) er we work with those schools</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>233.</td>
<td>R: [yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>234.</td>
<td>S: so we'd just transfer over</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>235.</td>
<td>R: [yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>236.</td>
<td>S: (2) yess who put a stop to it?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>237.</td>
<td>R: mm (3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>238.</td>
<td>S: Miss Williams.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239.</td>
<td>R: [his dad]. Oh I thought you were going to say his dad.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>240.</td>
<td>S: Miss Williams.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>242.</td>
<td>S: (3). New start. New school. We'll decide.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243.</td>
<td>R: Right right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>244.</td>
<td>S: First meeting with her, shouting and bawling in front of Owen (1).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>245.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>246.</td>
<td>S: At me and his dad. (1) Don't think that's acceptable.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>247.</td>
<td>R: Right ok then.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>248.</td>
<td>S: That's because dad wanted two uniforms and I says 'new school new start' what happened</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>249.</td>
<td>R: [yes]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>250.</td>
<td>S: at one school we're not having at other. (2) so one uniform cos he were make get changed out of uniform it it were unacceptable.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>251.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>252.</td>
<td>C: It weren't nice.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>253.</td>
<td>R: Mmm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>254.</td>
<td>C: (1) Erm (.) dad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>255.</td>
<td>R: [That] meeting you mean?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>256.</td>
<td>S: Er when when we found out (.) first meeting at Ham- er (.) Xnew school.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>257.</td>
<td>R: [Xnew school].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>258.</td>
<td>S: Er (.) dad had told Owen to tell (.) Xold school if they asked him (.) what school he wanted and to go for Xnew school (1) so that's what Owen did.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>259.</td>
<td>R: Ok.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>260.</td>
<td>S: (2) Not the school knew that dad would go for Xnew school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>261.</td>
<td>R: (right)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>262.</td>
<td>S: Owen told them that (.) They'd asked Owen. And they also asked Owen what</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
S: and our Owen said me mam would say Xsecond choice school because it's in between both houses.

R: [mm hmm]

S: and I can get transport to b both (1) which (.) is right

R: [yes] (2) So that would have been more convenient for you.

S: Yeah. (1) But they went with (.) this Xold teacher 2 and went to the meeting (1) and (.) it sounds like fought for Xnew school.

R: [right]

S: Not looking at (1) geographical

R: [yeah]

S: and anything else

R: OK.

S: the practicalities of it

R: [yeah]

S: I appreciate (.) that it weren't practical for Owen's dad with Owen being at Xold school (.) but it is were his choice

S: and it is were his school friends he he wanted to go with. He wanted to be with his friends.

R: [Mm hmm]

S: He went to (.) or Xnew school not knowing anybody. If he'd a gone to Xsecond choice school

R: [yeah]

S: he'd of known people from school.

R: [yeah]

S: Er the doing scouting from round here

R: [yeah]

S: so he'd got more chance of knowing people at Xsecond choice school.

R: I see what you mean

S: than knowing nobody at Xnew school.

R: [yeah]

S: so we'd got (.) added pressure then

R: [yeah]

S: and you've got (.) Xnew school (.) refusing to (.) allow access to to

R: [yeah]

S: that had been set up. By the previous school
Yet again, so different.

Schools have been fair to be quite honest.

R: So, I don't think that both.
S: Yes.
R: What happened for it things to.
S: They finished early for the (1).
R: They closed, (2) "closed at 12 in the on the (2) O'Clock.
S: I remember the school had.
R: So what happened for it things to.
S: They did Friday, 23rd about.
R: Six half past five that day. (1) gets a phone.
S: Yes.
R: New Year. It was (1) had it.
S: (2) and XJ told teacher, I told me that.
R: Miss (2) GM had a meeting.
S: Yes. So the school had already.
R: Owen, he was with his dad so he turned up to the meeting.
S: Em, in the evening. He was at (1).
R: So, he's supposed to have.
S: Yeah. She's supposed to have.
R: Phone them. (2) or (3) they were at (1).
S: Cos, they're supposed to have.
R: As they break up from school.

I have an opinion of the communication. It's not.

She want to be heard at.

The communication was poor with.

S: I'm not sure if it was good.
R: Communicate, very inconvenient.
S: It was.
R: New school.

Communications: Last.

Unconvinced.
R: Course, yeah.
S: To me (.) you you wouldn’t (1)
R: It’s very last minute.
S: Yeah. (1) Now erm (3) I don’t know
how dad found out where (1) obviously you
got the uniform from (.) but obviously dad’s
from there so there were there were some
kids on his street that go to Xnew school
R: [Right Ok]
S: but not in Owen’s year so obviously
he may have had to do some asking.
R: yeah
S: But then Owen was told to (1) tell
people (.) if he gets asked why he comes to
this school (.) it’s cos he lives at his dad’s. (1)
R: Right.
S: (3) That came from Miss Williams.
Really? (2) So we’re encouraging a child to
lie.
R: Mm hmm
S: (2) So obviously er that’s what he’s
(.) gone with.
R: Yeah. And that’s what he says to
people.
S: I totally disagree with it yeah.
R: Yeah.
S: I’m not saying he should tell the
truth.
R: Yes.
S: (2) but he certainly shouldn’t lie.
R: So did she tell him to say that to
people?
S: Yeah.
R: Right.
S: Yes. And his dad piped up with
R: Do you want a tissue?
S: It’s Ok ([laughs]) I’ve got some.
R: Have you ([laughs])
S: So hi- his dad (1) piped up with (.)
as I said (.) I told Owen to say that as well (.)
and with a great big grin on his face.
R: Right.
S: Not saying (.) tell the truth (1) but
(1) to lie like that (1) it’s (1) what are we
encouraging this child (1) so that’s a staff
member (.) and dad
R: Yes.
S: And I do disagree - it shouldn’t
have been said like that.
R: Was there any reason or it mean
did Owen feel as if he needed a reason?
Were children asking or
354. S: No (.) it were Miss Williams saying if people ask
355. R: Right.
356. S: (1) what are you going to say (.)
357. and she come up with that (.) I were like no,
358. R: And were you all there (.) in the
359. meeting? At this point in?
360. S: Yes (1) which (.) erm (.) dad turned
361. up late with Owen (2) and (1) dad got (.) told
362. off
363. R: Mm
364. S: (2) erm (5) which er (.) dad told
365. Owen this (.) later (.) I mean its not not good
366. (.)
367. R: Mm
368. S: You agree to go there (1) erm (1)
369. but yeah (.) his dad were late (.) with Owen
370. R: Right.
371. S: Er
372. R: And you were all you all had this
373. meeting arranged.
374. S: Yes.
375. R: At at Xnew school.
376. S: Yes (.) cos Owen had to go there a
377. little bit earlier (.) to (1) have a discussion or
378. R: Yeah [yeah]
379. S: Explain what were going on
380. R: [yeah]
381. S: and obviously turned late which (.)
382. erm (1) do understand it from school's point
383. of view cos they'd set a child up they'd got a
384. child ready (1) to kinda be a buddy with
385. Owen
386. R: Oh right
387. S: So to get they'd got to introduce
388. Owen to this child
389. R: [yeah]
390. S: (1) and then (.) obviousl go through
391. (.) various things he (1) I thin (.) how it were
392. working were Owen was (.) going to this
393. person's lessons
394. R: Right.
395. S: until they got him a timetabe
396. R: right
397. S: and (.) to (.) do things
398. R: Mm hmm hmm
399. S: until (1) but erm that (.) that's
400. supposed to have lasted a week
401. R: Right.
402. S: I think it only lasted a day.
403. R: ok
404. S: So (.) I mean
387. R: The buddy.
388. S: Yeah (2) but () at end of day (2) a kid can have good grades
389. R: [mm]
390. S: a kid work be very academic () don’t mean to say that they haven’t got no (1) issues or me- medical conditions
391. R: [Mm hmmm]
392. S: But when I () raised that with Miss Williams about him coming in Owen was aware (1) no but I’ll make my own decisions.
393. R: What about the mindspace and all
394. S: [yeah] she stopped them
395. R: [Mm hmmm]
396. S: (1) she stopped them.
397. R: [Mm hmmm]
398. S: (1) so he’s had no (1) intervention, no help to help this (1) emotional side
399. R: since he’s been there.
400. S: yeah.
401. R: Ok.
402. S: (1) and there has been incidents in that school as well.
403. R: Right (3) and what what what incidents have happened since he’s been there?
404. S: (1) he’s () he’s had older kids push him and bully him, bearing in mind she categorically stated that this is his last chance, and if he gets kicked out of that school (1) no other school () he won’t go to any other school.
405. R: Who said that?
406. S: Miss Williams.
407. R: Right.
408. S: (1) So () from a parent () I’m saying well you can’t even stick up for yourself
409. R: [mm]
410. S: Owen now () you can’t do anything (1) erm (1) so he’s (1) he’s been picked on erm before he broke up (1) for six weeks holidays () erm (1) in the hot weather they were out playing football
411. R: [mm hmmm]
412. S: () er in PE
413. R: mm
414. S: (1) I ain’t got a problem with that (1) er the PE teacher had said to the children if you’re hot and sweaty (1) ask the goalie
415. R: mm hmmm
416. S: to swap you places.
R: mm hmmm
S: So Owen had done that
R: mm hmmm
S: the goalie refused (1) it sounds a bit (2) were were (3) or (4) words (5) from both of them
R: Yeah.
S: (1) that then spilled in to the (1) erm (2) changing rooms
R: mm hmmm ok.
S: and then it escalated
R: mm hmmm
S: into (1) a fight
R: yeah
S: (1) or (1) where (1) yet again (1) erm (5) Owen to me (3) Owen (4) I'm not saying (2) I said to Owen (5) he he told me that he'd got him in a head lock (6) school never mentioned this (7) is taught him this headlock
R: Right
S: he's been doing it for (1) quite a while he's taught him years ago from being about 8.
R: mm
S: which (1) is not to me, is not good
R: mm
S: and I said that's an aggressive move
R: [Yeah]
S: yet again (1) so Owen (4) is very (1) intelligent
R: mm hmmm
S: or (1) it's learned behaviour
R: [yeah]
S: whichever way you want to look at it
R: [mm hmmm]
S: (1) responded with but I it's also a defensive move (2) well, I know that too (1) erm (1) I say (1) yes (1) but the fact that you hear this child talking about you
R: Yeah
S: you've gone over and opened your mouth
R: Yeah
S: I say (1) what do you think gonna happen? I says you should have kept your mouth shut
R: [mm]
S: and been the bigger person
R: [mm]
S: and that's what I keep saying to

S: speaking to Owen.

R: mm
S: I says (1) what do you think gonna happen? I says you should have kept your mouth shut
R: [mm]
S: and been the bigger person
R: [mm]
S: and that's what I keep saying to

R: mm
S: trying to be a good parent but battle with adult

S: He needs to learn

S: He had been punished rather than supported
him (.) I can’t be the bigger person
451. R: yes
452. S: dun’t think he just reacts
453. R: yes
454. S: (1) and (1) it’s no good
455. R: yeah
456. S: so you’ve got (2) well, it’s come to
my attention his his partner stays out of it
because she wants a quiet life
457. R: [OK]
458. S: So (1) the way that he (.) he talks
sometimes to women and
459. R: [OK]
460. S: belittles (.) and I mean (2) I do
think that (.) he’s not an angel no in fact I
know no kid’s are an angel!
461. R: [mm hnnm]
462. S: and I know Owen certainly isn’t (1)
but when he’s come back an tell me things
that he’s been doing at his dad’s
463. R: [yeah]
464. S: mouthing at adults
465. R: [OK]
466. S: and I’m like (1) what? (.) you no
you don’t
467. R: [yes]
468. S: you show respect
469. R: [yes]
470. S: you show respect (.) the fact that
just last (.) not last week, week before (1) I phoned school up to tell them that Owen
witnessed (.) being (.) verbally aggressive towards myself.
471. R: Right
472. S: It’s not it’s not good
473. R: Yeah (.) Owen seeing (.) seeing (.) that.
474. S: [yeah] but they’re supposed to have (.) staff out watching children and stuff
475. R: [yeah]
476. S: but they weren’t out (.) only this
week alone (.) in the past few days (.) well
sorry last week (.) are there members of staff
477. R: Yeah
478. S: That’s half the things have been
posted on social media (1) it’s it’s not good
479. R: yeah
480. S: (1) erm (1) and I (2) I’m not saying
that they would have been able to (.) stop his
dad (.) being the way that he was (.)
because obviously (.) they were on their
481. R: mm hnnm
S: er (...) but end of day (2) if their presence had of been there (...) his dad may have been different.

R: yeah yes.

S: I'm not saying he would have been (1) cos I've been (...) there in a mediation room with him when he's

R: mm (2) (...) right (2) who his dad?

S: Yeah (1) I've been there when he's

R: [yeah]

S: I'm not saying he would have made a difference

R: [yeah]

S: but it might have done.

R: yes

S: and my my whole onus is (1) everybody that I've spoken to have said that (1)

R: [mmm]

S: well (1) (1)

R: [mmm]

S: and then we can get Owen (2) to be the kid that he should be.

R: yes.

S: That he's entitled to be.

R: [yes (1)]

S: and that (...) that were starting to work (...) they saw (...) they saw straight through (...) his behaviour and his attitude

R: Ok who did?

S: Xold school (...) they saw straight through

R: Right I see (1) so they thought it was coming they thought they knew where it was coming from, you mean.

S: Yes (2) and then obviously that incident happened

R: [yeah]

S: and (2) I'm not saying that Xold teacher didn't fight for Owen to stay in

R: [yeah]

S: it's a shame that he didn't

R: [yeah, yeah]

S: stay in

R: Yeah

S: because he would have got the help.

R: yes.
DID MY UNDERSTANDING...

516. S: And Xold teacher I knew that (.)
517. R: Yeah
518. S: and (2) that weren't in Owen's
519. R: [yeah]
520. S: (.) but (.) obviously (1) he's there (.)
in xnew school
521. R: It's happened
522. S: because (.) Owen's done yet again
what (.) and state (.)
a school is instead of school dealing with it (.)
and not asking the child (.)
523. R: looking at it from both sides.
524. S: yeah (1) and leaving it for (.) the
meeting to decide what's best for that child
525. R: yeah
526. S: I appreciate (.) that children have
527. R: Yeah
528. S: and that they should be heard (1)
but when it comes to (.) a situation like this
and
529. R: Min brinn
530. S: So when it comes to situation like
that sometimes (1) is it actually (.) right to
ask that child
531. R: yeah
532. S: We've got to take it upon ourselves
533. R: Of course
534. S: are we making that decision
535. R: yeah, yeah
536. S: (.) and to me (.) they should have (.)
kinda left Owen out of it
537. R: yeah
538. S: I'm not saying ask the questions
539. R: yeah, yeah
540. S: er and then put 'em on the form
541. R: Yes
542. S: (.) cos that's what they've done.
543. R: Yeah
544. S: Or ask the questions and then think
actually (.) we (.) we now know what's been
said and we know he's in dad's care
545. R: yeah
546. S: cos that's what's happened
547. R: yes
548. S: and then (1) ???
549. R: [and that's why] that's why he's
made that decision
550. S: Yes.
551. R: [So how did it come about then]
with him deciding (.) with schools (.) did did
you have a meeting to talk about it or what
what happened?

552. S: [No] Owen was at

[redacted] talking him into going to xnew
school xnew school is the better school (1) er
all your your friends that he plays with at his
[redacted] in xnew school (.) he even told (.)
xoldschool (.) that (1) he knew ?? and he
knew people in xnewschool

553. R: mm

554. S: but he made it (.) sound like he
knew people in year

555. R: sorry I'm just checking it's still on

[(laughs)]

556. S: that he knew people in year seven
so he (.) got somebody to go

557. R: [right]

558. S: to that school with him year
seven (.) but that were (.) lies

559. R: Ok.

560. S: (; so yes he did know people in

561. R: [yes]

562. S: other years (.) but not in year
seven.

563. R: Yes, yes

564. S: (2) And that's where (.) we're at

565. R: [Yeah]

566. S: because (.) Miss Williams were led
to believe he knew people in year seven

567. R: [Ok]

568. S: (;) and you you haven't got time

569. R: [yeah]

570. S: and (.) the fact that (1) I mean (2)
like I said (1) it could be that Miss Wil-
Williams or whoever from xnew school
phoned sooner than (.) er xold teacher 1
from xold school

571. R: [mm hmm]

572. S: telling us what happened with the
meeting (.) but at end of day (1) the whole
process of it (.) the way that it went on (1)
were a shambles

573. R: Right.

574. S: (1) and it to be fair absolutely
appalling

575. R: Yeah

576. S: And then (.) things are being put in
place by one school and then the other say
no it can't happen

577. R: yeah

578. S: Why? (.) You [don't know that}
child

579. R: [You want it followed through.]
580. S: Yeah (1) there's a reason that
ty'hey've done what they've done
581. R: Yeah
582. S: so why have you blocked it and
that's what she's done.
583. R: [mm]
584. S: So she can tell you that he's a good
student (.) I'm not disputing [that]
585. R: [mm]
586. S: (1) but (.) he does have his
moments
587. R: [mm]
588. S: I mean he got sent home from
school (.) on Wednesday
589. R: [mm]
590. S: He had a (1) incident to his neck (.)
and then er (.) an injury (1) and he er (.)
and to be monitored but dad took him to
football.
591. R: [mm]
592. S: To play football.
593. R: Right.
594. S: Now (1) dealing with first aid and
stuff obviously they were looking for
concussion
595. R: [mm]
596. S: so he shouldn't have been at
football (.) wouldn't have allowed him to go.
597. R: [Yeah]
598. S: But (1) listening to Owen (.) he got
kicked in head (1)
599. R: At school.
600. S: At school (1) buy an accident (.) by
a friend (.) so (.) he obviously he's had a bit of
a taste of (.) what accident can do but
obviously (.) not to the force that Owen used
(1) and it it were horrid (.) and I turned
round and says Owen needs to stop (2) doing
any sport (.) especially football (.) because
even though it's supposed to be non-contact
601. R: [mm]
602. S: It is aggressive (1) and xold school
agreed with me
603. R: [yeah]
604. S: carried on (1) and (.)
605. R: Right.
606. S: (2) now (.) I'm (.) you probably
aware that (.) it don't matter what we do we
can all show aggression
208

607. R: [mm]
608. S: In various ways
609. R: [mm mm]
610. S: we can do it in tears and stuff
611. R: mmm
612. S: th- there's a lot of ways
613. R: course
614. S: Xnew TA identified Owen as (.) er (.) tearful (.) yer he is (.) how do we stop that tearfulness?
615. R: yeah (.) and that's currently now in Xnew school.
616. S: Th- that was before he broke up
617. R: Right
618. S: for six weeks holidays yes
619. R: Right (1) what did she mean by that do you think?
620. S: (1) well erm (.) she wanted to speak to him about something and she had to take him into (.) a room er because she know he'd cry I forgot what it were (3) oh (.) about because the fight (.) he got erm (.) sent home
621. R: Right (.) right ok.
622. S: (.) so she had to take him to a room.
623. R: Right.
624. S: And (.) even (.) when we went for the meeting after (.) he he was (.) he were crying then.
625. R: Was he.
626. S: (2) So (1) it's not (2) I'm not saying it's not normal there's times when (.) we we're gonna cry
627. R: yeah
628. S: (1) but (.) I'm telling our Owen (1) don't be ashamed to cry
629. R: Yeah
630. S: but there's a time and place when to cry (.) do it behind closed doors so you don't get picked on.
631. R: Yeah
632. S: (1) but it sounds a bit (.) couldn't see anything [wrong]
633. R: [yeah]
634. S: in his behavior at Xold school (.) and he couldn't see anything wrong in his behavior (.) at Xnew school.
635. R: Yeah
636. S: And I'm saying you (.) caused that by going up and (1) saying (1) if you've got owt to say say it to my face.
637. R: His dad tells him to (.) say that to (.)
638. S: I don’t know well that’s [what] Owen did
639. R: [Yeah]
640. S: and that’s why they end up fighting.
641. R: [Yeah]
642. S: Which (1) me and you’d say that that there’s no problem in [that]
643. R: [Yeah]
644. S: but then what (.) happens after that (.) we’re (.) liable for (.) so I (.) when I’ve had words with Owen I says you’d quite easily be kicked out of school for this
645. R: Mmm mmm (.) and this was before the summer there was an incident.
646. S: Yes yeah.
647. R: What happened there do you know?
648. S: (1) er (.) the both children got sent away f (1) from school (.) I think they don’t know if they had to miss a day
649. R: mm
650. S: and then you have like an integrated meeting back in (1) and (.) they told (.) new TA says that no further action will
651. R: [mm]
652. S: be taken with Owen (.) and that he would carry on
653. R: [Yeah]
654. S: in school.
655. R: [Yeah]
656. S: Which obviously were (.) kinda (.) a blessing
657. R: yeah
658. S: (1) but you (1) it’s like (.) walking on egg shells (1) because (1) for me (.) you’ve been told one thing by staff members
659. R: [mm]
660. S: and they this (.) they’ve done the opposite (1) and now what is the next stage if he gets kicked out of school (.) even for defending himself
661. R: [mm]
662. S: he’s entitled to defend [himself]
663. R: [Yeah] (.) yeah
664. S: But he’s also (.) to me (.) showing learned behavior
665. R: yes
666. S: So
667. R: It’s looking at the reasons behind
668. S: yeah Owen actually once said (.)
that (.) err and I couldn’t understand it (.) er in front of (.) Xoid teacher
and somebody else (.) he’s gonna be two
people (2) and I I didn’t understand it. (1)
669. R: Mm hmm
670. S: He’s gonna be (1) another person at mine (2)
and then (.) obviously (.) now it makes sense.
671. R: Who said that to you?
672. S: Owen.
673. R: Right.
674. S: He said it in (.) infrint of staff at
Xold school (.) that he’s going to be two
people (.) and I’m like no you’re one person
[you’ve only gotta be one].
675. R: [yeah yeah]
676. S: And (.) I didn’t (.) understand it (1)
and (.) now I do (1)
677. R: Cos you feel like that’s what’s going
on when he’s at his (.) dad’s
678. S: Yes (.) he’s witnessing it (.) I think
he’s (.) seeing bits (.) and I do I have
heard of a few incidents with with Owen (.)
er (2) with other children as well
679. R: Mm hmm
680. S: erm adults (.) and Owen said that
he were scared of the way he came out.
681. R: Right.
682. S: He’s said to me (.) in in the past he’s
(2) so (.) I mean what (.)
what else can I do
683. R: Yeah
684. S: I can’t (.) do anything?
685. R: Yeah.
686. S: (1) He’s a sitting duck (1)
(2) he’s (.) in his back
garden.
687. R: Right.
688. S: Why teach a kid to shoot (.) to be
better than
689. R: Yeah
690. S: others.
691. R: Yeah
692. S: And this is all because he were (.)
doing a bit of rifle shooting with scouts.
693. R: Right.
694. S: All kids are the same (.)
695. R: Ye-
696. S: (1) So what if he’s not as good as
oth- the others
S: It's not about being good is it?
R: Yeah (1) how do you think Owen feels about (1) about things now (1) in school?
S: (2) I think he (1) I think he's like me (1) he'll just (1) diddle (1) get his head down
R: mm
S: and (1) focus on (1) the work in school (1) hand (1) that's why his (1) grades are so good (1) but it still has an impact (1) because (1) it's a bit like (2) we'll say (1) yourself (1)
R: mm
S: Whatever problems you've got at home (1) you go to work and you focus on work
R: Yeah
S: And then (1) you (1) you deal with them [when you]
R: [yeah]
S: Come home (1) and I think that's (1) exactly what Owen's been doing for (1) quite a long time.
R: Yeah.
S: The fact that (1) this that's order that's in place (1) i told him to say and tell him what to say and (1) Owen says (1) got me to lie (1) I don't like it and kept saying he don't like this order he wanted it changing (1) erm (1) (1) I won't acknowledge him (1) he ignores him when he speaks to him (1) erm I'm not saying that he's doing that now (1) but (1) all this has an impact.
R: mm
S: I'm not going to say to you that I don't ignore Owen
R: mm
S: (1) and I do and I can tell you when that [is]
R: mm
S: when I'm driving that car (1) and I know that something's been said and I've not caught it
R: [yeah]
S: Cos you're concentrating.
R: yeah course
S: So when I say (1) I'm sorry Owen you've said something
R: yeah
S: Repeat it he went (1) yer I know you were concentrating cos [I've explained it]
R: [And he understands, yeah]
724. S: because I've explained (.) I don't just blatantly
725. R: yeah
726. S: so you ask me a question (.) oh (1)
    I'm not answering you
727. R: Yeah
728. S: I don't answer
729. R: yeah
730. S: I'm not that person
731. R: yeah
732. S: I (.) I've acknowledged you I've given him a reason
733. R: yeah
734. S: I think that's (1)
735. R: Important.
736. S: that's what we need to do with children (.) not just (.) we ignore
737. R: yeah
738. S: questions (.) if he asks me questions (1) erm (.) I'll answer them
739. R: yeah
740. S: (.) if I don't know the answer he gets (.) I don't know (.)
741. R: (laughs)
742. S: er (.) shall we try google (laughs)
743. R: (laughs) yeah
744. S: Do do you know what I mean
745. R: yeah
746. S: I'm not scared to [say]
747. R: [yeah course]
748. S: oh I don't know Owen.
749. R: Yeah
750. S: And I think that's part of (1)
    showing that we
751. R: that it's [OK]
752. S: [OK]
753. R: yeah
754. S: We're not gonna know all the answers
755. R: yeah
756. S: we are going to fail at things we are gonna make mistakes (.) so (.) if I've made a mistake at work (1) and we for whatever reason it comes into study I'll tell them I've made a mistake (.)
757. R: mm
758. S: to show that I (.) I'm human (.)
759. R: course (.) and that's important.
760. S: Erm (.) as as for lies (1) he's caught his dad out in more lies than (1) anything
761. R: Ok.
762. S: I'll don't know how (.) that (.)
S. You try to be helpful. I don't want to affirm her.

R. So, you're trying to honor her. I think she's feeling sorry for Owen.

S. I understand @ home.

R. I want to think about Owen.
couldn’t guarantee the safety of those children

829. R: Mm hmm
830. S: 
831. R: Right.
832. S: 
833. R: Yeah
834. S: Having that (.) undermined and having adult to another adult when (.) you’re teaching ‘em (.) respect and everything else (2) is not good.
835. R: Course.
836. S: (1) so I end up having to (1) quit scouts
837. R: Mm hmm
838. S: 
839. R: Mm hmm
840. S: 
841. R: [yeah]
842. S: the other people.
843. R: Yeah
844. S: (1) It it it were absolutely horrendous (.) so (2) the only person that’s ever spoke (.) I’ve only ever met and spoken to (.) is Xnew TA
845. R: Right OK
846. S: (.) erm (.) she’s she’s lovely (.) but (.) I’m not not gonna not challenge something (doesn’t want to acknowledge)
847. R: yeah
848. S: If I like (.) like (.) yourself (1) I thought it were unacceptable leaving a voice mail I mean you can listen to the voice mail
849. R: Mm hmm
850. S: asking if I give permission (.) but I knew you’d been in week week [before].
851. R: [mm]
852. S: So (1) week one yeah
853. R: yeah
854. S: and how many other appointments you need (1) they shouldn’t me contacting me
855. R: No
856. S: in my book (.) cos they’ve had that initial (2) say so.
857. R: Yeah yeah
858. S: Not (.) when you’re trying to make another appointment.
859. R: Yes.
860. S: (...) And I don’t know (1) or (...) what that (...) information is (...) or why it’s happened.
861. R: [mm]
862. S: but to me (...) it’s [incorrect]
863. R: [mm]
864. S: and that’s not safeguarding.
865. R: yeah (1) the communication.
866. S: That’s not safeguarding (1) children.
867. R: [mm]
868. S: Cos Owen said to me (...) he ac he actually asked if he were in trouble (.)
869. R: Right.
870. S: He didn’t know (...) who (1) he was seeing (...) what for (2) nothing were explained to him
871. R: [mm]
872. S: (1) Miss Williams wasn’t the one that went for him
873. R: [mm]
874. S: (1) and (.) the actual the person who (.) he were with (.) had to ask (.)
875. R: [mm]
876. S: for them to say that no he’s not in trouble.
877. R: Yeah yeah yeah.
878. S: (1) How bad’s that?
879. R: [mm]
880. S: (2) [when]
881. R: [The communication]
882. S: Yeah (...) So they put him through that but of [anxiety]
883. R: [mm]
884. S: (1) for what?
885. R: [mm]
886. S: (2) But then on top of that (...) if they’d have said a name (1) cos obviously (.) he’s rea- got your stuff (2) he might not have (.) twiggged
887. R: [mm]
888. S: who it were (...) but the minute you
889. R: [mm]
890. S: started talking
891. R: [mm]
892. S: he would a he would of twiggged.
893. R: Yeah (.) yeah course (.) yeah yeah.
894. S: (.) but not knowing (1)
895. R: [mm]
896. S: So (1) and that
897. R: It was unnecessary really.
S: Yeah.
R: To put him through like you say.
S: (!) But obviously (!) what (1) his dad’s been bitten by a dog.
R: Right.
S: In work (1) or (2) so I couldn’t notify Owen (1) before he went.
R: Mm hmm
S: (2) See this is (1) Owen.
R: Yeah.
S: For what (1) he were gonna walk into.
R: Yes.
S: (!) Obviously I I couldn’t.
R: Yeah.
S: (2) So (2) you’re (!) obviously your time going in you’re not gonna know nobody knows what’s going on in other people’s lives.
R: Mm
S: (1) So (1) who knows what were going round Owen’s (2) mind at that particular [point].
R: [yes]
S: (1) knowing obviously (!) that had happened with his [dad].
R: [Yes] right.
S: (1) Then from what I gather (!) on the Thursday his dad’s gone to hospital.
R: Right.
S: and then got kep in.
R: Right.
S: (!) and he were due another (!) so he’d had the operation on the Saturday before.
R: Mm
S: he went back to his dads (1) and he were due another operation on the Saturday he came to myself.
R: Mm hmm
S: and he’d not (!) had one.
R: Mm hmm.
S: So there’s (2) I I obviously (!) dad...
R: mm
S: (1) I I say it how it is (!) you ask me questions I will answer honestly.
R: Yeah.
S: I tell you no lies (1) I’ve got now to
931. R: Yes.
932. S: (1) The people that have got something to hide (2) we we know how it ends up do you know what I mean.
933. R: Course yeah.
934. S: ( ) but () it () to me and I'll be honest (2) I've had dogs () and I've I've let him into my home
935. R: mm
936. S: when Owen's been ill and I've seen him kick me dogs
937. R: mm
938. S: ( )
939. R: [yeah]
940. S: on both [hands]
941. R: [yeah yeah]
942. S: () but at end of day
943. R: Yeah
944. S: what has (1) that person done
945. R: The reason for it.
946. S: Yeah. But that dog's gonna be put down [now].
947. R: [Yeah] right.
948. S: (2) But he could have been provoked.
949. R: Yes yeah yeah yeah course (1) erm (2) so you were talking about is it Xnew TA?
950. S: (1) Yeah
951. R: What's been your involvement with her then? (1) or Owen's involvement with her do you know?
952. S: Er (1) she () often checked in on him to make sure he was ok () she made sure she'd got the built that relationship up with him so that () he could go to her for () anything () and (1) obviously Owen's entitled to his privacy
953. R: Mm
954. S: () so he doesn't tell me () anything. () I mean () Owen has started (1) now (). Becoming () secretive ()
955. R: Right.
956. S: And (1) I've heard of () things that he tells me and (2) you see the look on his face as if to say (1) oh (1) I know what's coming now I shouldn't have told her.
957. R: Right.
958. S: (1) And that's the way that his (1) him and his friends are talking to other
people (1) it’s acceptable (3) and it’s acceptable (3) but it’s not acceptable (1) it don’t matter whether we know (1) people or not we show respect.

960. R: Yeah.

961. S: I appreciate should be earned

962. S: I mean I’ve seen it on (3) social media where (3) there’s incidents at Xnew school (3) and they’re saying that (1) people outside of (3) Xarea, Xarea and Xarea and that (3) can’t go to Xnew school (3) that means Owen (1) but it don’t mean to say he’s a bad person (3) but (1) your Owen’ll always tell me (1) I’m the best one (1) I don’t lie and I don’t mean that in a in a it’s a competition way it’s not a competition (1) but I’m having to (1) kinda (1) be (1) more of (3) I know (3) we’ll call it the horrible person.

963. R: Mm hmm

964. S: (1) er pointing all the bad things out what can happen

965. R: mm

966. S: (1) because he’s seeing it he’s living with it and he thinks it’s normal but it’s not normal (3) and how do you and I’m not an expert (1) when you (2) see (1) learned behavior

967. R: Yeah.

968. S: coming along (3) how do we (3) interrupt it

969. R: Mm

970. S: how to we (1) correct it? (1) To me (2)

971. R: You’re doing all you can by the sounds of it

972. S: keep keep away from (1) that negative that person (1) but when it’s a week on or it can be

973. R: Yes

974. S: but it (1) I’ll tell you what (1) he had him three weeks (1) er (2) school holidays (3) together (2) and I’ll be honest (3) I dreaded Owen coming back (1)

975. R: Yeah.

976. S: Cos I knew full well (1) what a challenge it would be.

977. R: Ok (1) cos he’d been with him for so long [you mean yeah]

978. S: [Yeah and he] Owen (1) has said to people that (3) he hates Mondays (2) going back going to and forth.
R: Cos that’s the changeover you mean.

S: Changeover day yeah (.) and that’s the day he’s gotta (1) change into that person that (1) we ex (1) we we we expect him [to be].

R: (Yeah.) You feel as if he’s (1) sort of (.) torn (.) he he he feels like he is (1) torn between

S: (1) Maybe yeah (.) but also he’s gotta then (.) change into the person we expect him to be.

R: Yeah (3) yeah (.) Do you think school notice any (1) difference with him whether he’s been with you or with his dad?

S: I don’t know but I do know that (.) like last week when there were that incident where they were sending him home (.) erm (1) they asked Owen (1) who he’s with (2). How bad is that? (1) I mean his dad’s (3) fair enough (.) I could write the dates down when (.)

R: yeah.

S: he should be with his dad (1) but (1) why should I? (2) Does that make sense?

R: Yeah.

S: Just to prevent (1) common sense (.) yeah Owen’s gonna know where he’s with

R: Yeah.

S: or who he’s with (1) but (2) they phone both parents any way (.) so (1) what is

R: Why do you think they were asking that?

S: (1) I think it’s so they knew who to contact.

R: Right.

S: But they phoned us both [anyway]

R: [Right] yes (2) and when was this incident?

S: That were Wednesday (1) before you went in on the Thursday.

R: (1) and what had happened?

S: (1) Erm (2) he did PE (.) they were doing (.) I forgot what sport they were doing in PE (.) and he hurt his (.) neck (1) and then at lunch break he were playing football

R: Mm hmm

S: and they (.) they (.) their voice mail said there were an accident.

R: And it was an accident?

S: (.) Our Owen said it was his friend
that kicked him in head

1003.  R: Right.
1004.  S: So I (1) can only go with what
1005.  R: Yeah yeah
1006.  S: Owen’s saying cos school (...) gave
   nothing [away]
1007.  R: [Yeah]
1008.  S: They didn’t tell me nothing.
1009.  R: Yeah (.) Right Ok (2) Do you feel
   like erm (3) Owen (1) is (.) I know you said he
didn’t have any friends when he started
what’s the situation with that now do you
think?
1010.  S: He’s got friends.
1011.  R: Mm hmm
1012.  S: (1) erm (2) I’m encouraging him to
   (.) see ‘em out side of school.
1013.  R: Yeah.
1014.  S: And (.) the response I got were (2)
   if I do that I’m not coming back here.
1015.  R: (3) And what did he mean by that
do you think?
1016.  S: (.) Because they’re over at his
dad’s.
1017.  R: (.) The friends? (.) Right. (3) Mm
   hmm.
1018.  S: (1) Which (1) he’ll of been told to
   say.
1019.  R: Right.
1020.  S: (.) That’s not Owen at all.
1021.  R: Yeah. (3) And what (.) do you think
do you think he meant by it? (1) Do you think
he knew what he was saying or?
1022.  S: (2) I don’t know.
1023.  R: Mm hmm
1024.  S: I honestly don’t know
1025.  R: mm
1026.  S: (1) I don’t know it hurt ([choking
   up])
1028.  S: You think this poor kid.
1030.  S: (1) I get (2) there’s no reason why
   he can’t (1) go see his friends (.) even if it
means me go picking him up because (.) it is
two busses...
1031.  R: Of course,
1032.  S: (2) There’s no reason why they
can’t come here.
1033.  R: Yeah.
1034.  S: (1) But clearly (1) there is (1) and I
   aint got to the bottom of that yet.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>R: Right.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1036.</td>
<td>S: (2) So he's been in (.) that school since January (.) he's talked about his friends.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1037.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1038.</td>
<td>S: (3) And (3) I don't think (3) I think reading between the lines I mean I caught him the other day and he he wouldn't (11) a friend (.) had text him (1) aint a problem with [that]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1039.</td>
<td>R: [Yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1040.</td>
<td>S: and I went ooh (.) it were a bit late (.) and he eventually (.) showed me this picture (.) and he told me that (.) he (1) he'd sent it to this friend (.) and said it's about bad hair (1) er person having bad hair</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1041.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1042.</td>
<td>S: (.) and er it's Agnes this is one of his friends and (.) he goes to Xnew school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1043.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1044.</td>
<td>S: But he lives up Xarea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1045.</td>
<td>R: Right</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1046.</td>
<td>S: (2) and (.) er (2) I says well (.) that's not nice I says would you like that (.) how would you feel if that were (.) about you? (1) He went it were a laugh I went (.) but is it really?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1047.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1048.</td>
<td>S: I says cos that can also be classed as bullying</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1049.</td>
<td>R: Yes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1050.</td>
<td>S: (2) I'm going to bed.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1051.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1052.</td>
<td>S: And that's what he did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1053.</td>
<td>R: Right</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1054.</td>
<td>S: (.) So do you see what I mean [about]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1055.</td>
<td>R: [Yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1056.</td>
<td>S: It falls into place [now]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1057.</td>
<td>R: [yes]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1058.</td>
<td>S: about being two different [people].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1060.</td>
<td>S: What's acceptable to [one]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1061.</td>
<td>R: [yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1062.</td>
<td>S: (.) and what's acceptable to [another]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1063.</td>
<td>R: [to the other]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1064.</td>
<td>S: and we should be o both be on the same page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1065.</td>
<td>R: Yes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1066.</td>
<td>S: (1) but (1) I I'll tell you something now (1) not only, I've got two children, not only did I ever read 'em (.) story books</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1067. R: mm
1068. S: (1) I used to (1) make stories up.
1069. R: Mm
1070. S: (1) They used to (1) ask me to make stories up (1) and (1) this particular time I made (1) a story up and (1) I mentioned (1).
1071. R: Mm hmm
1072. S: (1) mm
1073. R: Mm
1074. S: mm...
1075. R: Right.
1076. S: (1) And (1) Owen started crying (1) [and]
1077. R: [why?]
1078. S: I couldn’t understand why (1) and he went (1) it was...
1079. R: Aah
1080. S: (2) and (1) I went no he went it were (1) he went (1) because (1) all my...
1081. R: Right.
1082. S: (1) and despite me saying no (1) and I so that were the last I ever (1) made anything up.
1083. R: Yeah.
1084. S: (2) So (1) do you know what I mean [so]
1085. R: [yeah]
1086. S: If people can do that (1) I mean (1) on his phone (1) or (4) (1) he’s gotta ask permission for various things.
1087. R: mm
1088. S: And it it’s a way of (1) basically (1) I think it’s set up (1) and I could (1) if I wanted to (1) cos I work with phones
1089. R: Yeah.
1090. S: I could quite easily go in (1) and disable everything (1) but I know full well it’ll be set up (1) mm (1) I know that.
1091. R: (1) Right.
1092. S: (1) It were that bad a one point I’d got people asking me to take my car to the garage to the garage (1) to have a look to see...
1093. R: Right.
1094. S: Or (1) and things because he were...
1095. R: Really.
1096. S: ...
just dropped Owen off (1) How he’d know (.) where I were I’ve no idea
1097. R: [Right ok]
1098. S: So (.) there’s a lot of things
[behind]
1099. R: [Yeah yeah] yeah
1100. S: behind it
1101. R: Yeah
1102. S: (1) but this kid is technically (.) I’m not saying the behaviour’s right
1103. R: Yeah
1104. S: (1) cos (.) by (.) no [means]
1105. R: [yeah]
1106. S: and I’m not (1) I don’t condone it
1107. R: [Yes (.) it’s looking at where it comes from (2) having that understanding.
1108. S: (1) my children have
1109. R: Yeah
1110. S: (1) but obviously (.) Owen still
1111. R: [yeah]
1112. S: Fair enough (1) er (.) I can’t tell you the last time
1113. R: Min
1114. S: (2) but (1) that don’t mean to say that he’s not (.) witnessing (.) anything.
1115. R: [Yeah. (2) Do you think Owen’s happy at Xnew school?
1116. S: (4) er (4) I think Owen will throw his self into school (1) to (1) impress his dad because he knows friends in there (2) but Owen (.) would do that at any [school]
1117. R: [yeah]
1118. S: (.) not to impress people.
1119. R: [Yeah]
1120. S: He (1) he’d want to (1) do himself good.
1121. R: He likes to do well.
1122. S: Yes.
1123. R: (1) mm hmm
1124. S: But he’s turning into somebody that doesn’t like losing (1) and (1) I’ve tried telling him that it’s not always about winning cos I left his dad (1) I didn’t (1) I knew I had had a battle in kicking him out of the house so
1125. R: Min hm
1126. S: (1) he’s so bared allb being ‘great’ to him he: doesn’t like losing?
1128. S: (...) I just left (...) and just took our stuff didn't take anything didn't take him for the house (...) didn't take him for nothing. (1) So and I'm (...) bringing our Owen up differently. (...) I've I'll be honest with you I've I've had problems with my (...) my daughter

1129. R: Mm

1130. S: (1) er (1)

1131. R: She's older [did you say].

1132. S: she she's older

1133. R: Mm

1134. S: and (...) looking back (1) er the way that

1135. R: yeah

1136. S: (2) and (1) so yeah I've had (...) problems (...) with her (...) and (...) I see Owen going the same way.

1137. R: Right.

1138. S: There's no two ways about it (1) it were (1) it's awful because (...) I couldn't see (...) at that point (2) I know that I used to say her to go out (1) but that weren't good enough (1) er (...) d'you know what I mean (1) but (1) I just (...) don't know (...) I do know that (1) er parents have complained when Owen started playing football (...) and the way that

1139. R: At Xnew school?

1140. S: (...) no at this football club.

1141. R: I see right.

1142. S: (1) er (1) I refused to take Owen [because]

1143. R: (mm)

1144. (...)

1145. R: Mm

1146. S: he was only young and sort of (...) then he was being aggressive [and it's like]

1147. R: Right

1148. S: (1) Owen (...) I'm gonna have to stop you from going (...) because (...) I don't want to (1) but (...) it's not fair what's happening every time I take you.

1149. R: Who Owen was being aggressive you mean: [cos he didn't want]

1150. S: [and being horrible]
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1151</td>
<td>R: (ahhh)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1152</td>
<td>S: towards me other people and Owen were witnessing it so I kept away I asked the club to step in and?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1153</td>
<td>R: [yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1154</td>
<td>S: respect his ?? [to keep away]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1155</td>
<td>R: [yeah yeah yeah yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1156</td>
<td>S: and they wouldn’t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1157</td>
<td>R: yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1158</td>
<td>S: (1) so I didn’t (.) he’s not even told me he’s signed him up</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1159</td>
<td>R: Right</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1160</td>
<td>S: he (.) signed him up for things including running</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1161</td>
<td>R: Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1162</td>
<td>S: and and they clash</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1163</td>
<td>R: yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1164</td>
<td>S: Why (.) do that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1165</td>
<td>R: yeah yeah yeah yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1166</td>
<td>S: (.) erm (1) Owen (2) we’re all competitive (1) there’s no two ways about it (1) Owen (1) I have brought Owen up (.) to do his best at everything</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1167</td>
<td>R: mm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1168</td>
<td>S: but if he don’t win (.) it’s the participating that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1169</td>
<td>R: Course yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1170</td>
<td>S: (1) but when somebody else says something different</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1171</td>
<td>R: yeah (.) the mixed messages:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1172</td>
<td>S: Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1173</td>
<td>R: mm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1174</td>
<td>S: Don’t help a kid does it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1175</td>
<td>R: Yeah yeah yeah (.) do you ever (.) do you have much contact with school at the minute er or have you had sort of sice January (.) is it (.) do they (.) kinda tell you how Owen’s doing or (1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1176</td>
<td>S: No (1) er term you might get (1) they call it a report it’s it’s not a report it’s (.) absolutely rubbish (1) it just tells you the predicted grades (.) er whether it’s expected to be (1) that’s it</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1177</td>
<td>R: yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1178</td>
<td>S: (1) that’s all you get (.) nothing (1) the fact like I said (.) don’t know about parents evening it don’t get passed on.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1179</td>
<td>R: Did his dad go or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1180</td>
<td>S: (1) They can’t tell me that (1) but Owen were with me (.) so his dad didn’t know</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1182. S: but (.) going back to football (1) even though (.) he were doing football they were being (1) er (1) first presentation (.) Owen didn’t know about it and (.) I don’t know about it (.) and if I’d have got something on I’d have said to dad well take him him he deserves to go

1184. S: (1) er (.) Owen missed out

1185. R: mm

1186. S: (2) it’s it’s somebody else has took over (.) and I didn’t know he he were signed up the only time I knew he got signed up for this (1) er other team (1) were when the messaged me the day before (1) to take him to a match.

1187. R: Right.

1188. S: (1) like (1) not (2) they should be telling

1189. R: Yeah course

1190. S: because it I’m having to give up my time

1191. R: Yeah

1192. S: I’m expected to give up my time (.) he signed him up

1193. R: [You need to know what’s happening]

1194. S: I need to know exactly (.) anyway when it come to presentation they messaged (.) er and the Owen were with me (1) I didn’t say anything (.) any way erm (1) I took (1) Owen I took my mum (1) him and his partner were there

1195. R: Mm

1196. S: and (.) his face cos we walked through (.) the door (1) but Owen would have missed on another one

1197. R: Right.

1198. S: (.) so are (.) says I asked me didn’t tell me.

1199. R: mm

1200. S: (2) He says to see what (.) other kids got

1201. R: (1) right

1202. S: So our Owen says but why didn’t you tell me?

1203. R: yeah, yeah yeah

1204. S: (2) Why not tell him?

1205. R: Yeah

1206. S: Yet again that same scenario
R: Course.
S: If I didn’t want to go (.). Owen could have [gone]
R: [yeah] yeah yeah
S: He could have took him
R: Yeah (1) course.
S: So (1) he’d have missed another [one]
R: [yeah]
S: (1) how far is that on that child?
R: Course yeah
S: What are we doing with that [child]?
R: [Yeah]
S: He signed him up for running (.). running currently is on Tuesdays and Thursdays.
R: Mm (1) is this after school or is it a different
S: This it’s after school.
R: Afer school.
S: But if they have races they can be on a Wednesday.
R: Yeah (1) is it at Xnew school?
S: No it’s at Xrunning place.
R: Right.
S: But erm (.). if he wants to do cross country it’s now starting on a weekend every Saturday.
R: Right.
S: But (1) he set him up with scouts (.). and then (.). I took him and he (.). he didn’t pay he told me things were sorted (.). didn’t pay (.). did (.). I got told to pay for Xrunning place (.). the next minute (.). and it were July (.). I gets a text message I owe money
R: Right.
S: Well (.). what do I owe money for I’ve paid Xrunning place.
R: Mm
S: And then I got this guy being arsey (.). saying (.). or well if it’s a problem I’ll go to dad no I’ve asked for your details to transfer
R: Yes
S: I’m just wondering why I owe you money (2) or (.). so (.). Owen’s (.). decided that (.). for me not to take him running (.). but to take him footballing (.). so I’m taking him [footballing]
R: [mm hmm]
S: but two people have said how
aggressive he is on the pitch.

1237. R: Right
1238. S: (2) Now it would be quite
   interesting if they if somebody comes up to
   me and says that they see a difference in
   Owen
1239. R: Yes.
1240. S: In ( ) my weeks and his weeks (1)
   but ( ) don’t ( ) think that they will
1241. R: Yes (1) it would be interesting.
1242. S: (1) but I ( ) I have seen Owen play
   dirty
1243. R: Yes
1244. S: Cos I used to take him to kicks (1) [I
   know he can]
1245. R: (right)
1246. S: play dirty
1247. R: Yes
1248. S: and ( ) when you’ve got
   tackled dirty (1) erm (2) Owen’s been ( )
   tackled dirty (1) and I’ll and I’ve said well
   Owen Owen’s tackled dirty
1249. R: Yeah
1250. S: So what’s difference?
1251. R: Yeah
1252. S: It’s ok for Owen
1253. R: Yeah
1254. S: It’s OK for another kid.
1255. R: Yeah
1256. S: Don’t come to me over another kid
1257. R: Yes
1258. S: a week later that you want me to
deal with
1259. R: Yes
1260. S: You should have dealt with it at
   that point. (1) Telling me that Owen’s been
   beat up by two boys at youth club.
1261. R: mm hmmm
1262. S: (1) It weren’t that at all.
1263. R: mm
1264. S: They’d been running ( ) they
   banged heads.
1265. R: Right.
1266. S: Two different things
1267. R: Yeah
1268. S: ( ) yeah then ( ) a kids gone and ( )
   erm (1) like ( ) kicked our Owen’s leg.
1269. R: Yeah.
1270. S: (1) Our Owen’s fell down (1) but
   then our Owen’s got up and then ( )
   discreetly kicked other kid.
1271. R: Right
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Transcript</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1272.</td>
<td>S: So (1) who’s been (.) who’s been beaten up?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1273.</td>
<td>R: Yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1274.</td>
<td>S: Nobody’s been beaten up have they? (1) Owen’s got own back [on this other]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1275.</td>
<td>R: [course]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1276.</td>
<td>S: on this other kid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1277.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1278.</td>
<td>S: So it’s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1279.</td>
<td>R: Works both ways.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1280.</td>
<td>S: It does but don’t he won’t deal with it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1281.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1282.</td>
<td>S: I mean take him to youth club (1) it’s it’s awful (1) er I gets a phone call saying Owen’s not well can you pick him up? Yes so I went and picked him up (1) and response I got were and Owen were there were (.) thank god it’s you.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1283.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1284.</td>
<td>S: (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1285.</td>
<td>R: Really</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1286.</td>
<td>S: How how nasty he is (1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1287.</td>
<td>R: Really.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1288.</td>
<td>S: And our Owen’s there and I walked away and I went (1) have I missed something and our Owen says yeah (.) me</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1289.</td>
<td>R: Really.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1290.</td>
<td>S: (1) In front of Owen and in front of other [children.]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1291.</td>
<td>R: [Yeah] yeah yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1292.</td>
<td>S: I were like (1) what (.) are we doing [to this kid?]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1293.</td>
<td>R: [Course] (.) course.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1294.</td>
<td>S: So it don’t matter what (.) what it is (.) whether (.) it’s one parent involvement or two parent involvement (.) it’s not working. (1) That kid witnesses (1) and (1) our Owen (.) did tell (1) the school over road (.) about</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1295.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1296.</td>
<td>S: keeping him off and following us.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1297.</td>
<td>R: Right ok.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1298.</td>
<td>S: (1) And er (1) our Owen’s saying he (.) actually told staff members at the</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Line</td>
<td>Transcript</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1299.</td>
<td>R: Ok</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1300.</td>
<td>S: but they didn’t report it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1301.</td>
<td>R: Right ok.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1302.</td>
<td>S: (1) He has been failed in so many ways</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1303.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1304.</td>
<td>S: (1) and I think (.) to a degree he continues to be failed.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1305.</td>
<td>R: Mm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1306.</td>
<td>S: Because the school (.) for what ever reasons (.) Xold school had (1) knew school should have allowed [to follow up].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1307.</td>
<td>R: [:tear (.) yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1308.</td>
<td>S: Not th them make their own decisions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1309.</td>
<td>R: Yeah. (1) What do you think erm (.) with the whole sort of swap and things (.) cos I know you said it was like (.) just chaotic the whole process (1) erm (3) do you have any say in which school he was gonna go to?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1310.</td>
<td>S: (shakes head)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1311.</td>
<td>R: (1) th they sort of just asked Owen.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1312.</td>
<td>S: (1) They asked (.) his dad [and Owen].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1313.</td>
<td>R: [Right].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1314.</td>
<td>S: They they did ask Owen what I would say.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1315.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1316.</td>
<td>S: (1) and erm (3) Owen said Xsecond choice school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1317.</td>
<td>R: Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1318.</td>
<td>S: because it’s between [both houses]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1319.</td>
<td>R: [yes I see yeah yeah (1) with (1) what would you say (1) with (.) the process (.) what would you say would have made things better (1) with the swap (1) process?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1320.</td>
<td>S: (3) If they’d have (1) whether (.) I appreciate you might have forms and things to fill in (.) but if they had a meeting that day it should have been raised up that there were another (.) pupil and it should be taken verbally then followed up with paperwork</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1321.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1322.</td>
<td>S: if need be. (.) I don’t think it should be all paperwork (1) like in that incidence if it happened on that day of meeting it should be brought up at that meeting (.) to avoid (1) any (.) erm (.) upset and (1) disrupt to the education (.) and the child.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1323.</td>
<td>R: (.) What do you m what should have been brought up would you say?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1324.</td>
<td>S: (3) They have that those meetings</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**GET DOWN**

- Staff not listening
  - He has been failed
  - Not having a say
  - They didn’t continue with the SEMH WORK
  - Persisted
  - Directing conversation
  - Mum not involved in decisions

- **Mum’s opinion not listened to**
  - Understand that they will have paperwork
  - I am reasonable
  - Quick decision making is needed
  - Power/Agency
  - Wanted too long: child upset and vacation disrupted
don’t they and it happened to be on that day
that (1) they didn’t speak about Owen on
that day
1325.  R: Right.
1326.  S: because (.) they didn’t have time to
get the paperwork through
1327.  R: Oh I see. Ok
1328.  S: So why not why not do it verbally
[sometimes]
1329.  R: [yes] (2) So you mean the meeting
where they decide [about swaps]
1330.  S: [Yes]
1331.  R: Yeah.
1332.  S: I think (.) what they should (.) do is
(1) sometimes deviate if they haven’t [got
time for the paperwork]
1333.  R: [yeah yeah]
1334.  S: then (.) talk about it verbally
1335.  R: Mm hmm
1336.  S: And (.) that (.) cuts out (1) erm (.)to
a degree (1) missing of
1337.  R: yes
1338.  S: education cos that’s what [Owen’s
done]
1339.  R: [Yeah] yeah (.) while he was
waiting you mean [in between]
1340.  S: [Yes] (1) er I mean I know he’s an
intelligent kid (.) but he’d of been better off
still learning
1341.  R: mm hmm
1342.  S: I were doing my own stuff (.) here
at home
1343.  R: Mm hmm
1344.  S: but that’s not (.) fair.
1345.  R: [Yeah.]
1346.  S: But the fact is as well (.) let’s not
forget is (.) if that child gets seen out of
school
1347.  R: Yeah
1348.  S: we can get fined. (.) I’m sorry
1349.  R: Mmm
1350.  S: how on earth can you go for six
weeks (1) even sometimes a day without
having to (.) go out an take that child with
you?
1351.  R: (2) Yeah.
1352.  S: So (1) if (.) if I’d of been fined cos
he had he had to come [with me]
1354.  S: (1) that’s down to the school
1355.  R: Yeah
1356.  S: and Xlocal authority council cos I
we fall under Xlocal authority

1357. R: Yeah.
1358. S: (1) for allowing that [situation to occur.]
1359. R: [Yeah () yeah () yeah.]
1360. S: And I know that they wouldn't have a leg to stand on.
1361. R: Yeah.
1362. S: (1) And sometimes (1) I come across (2) erm () being clever because () I know things. (1) And I know (1) that that's not the way () it should be.
1363. R: Mm.
1364. S: Because (1) the () top and bottom of it is (1) it don't matter which individual it is, we're all equal. () But when it comes to children (1) and their schooling (1) that should be paramount.
1365. R: Yes.
1366. S: (1) Des- despite whatever protocol it is if it means having to deviate
1367. R: Yeah.
1368. S: away () let's [deviate]
1369. R: [Yes]
1370. S: A little bit. () As long as it
1371. R: Yes.
1372. S: Protects that child [it's in the interest of child.]
1373. R: [Course. (1) Yeah.]
1374. S: If we've got one school saying () yes we we need () these agencies working with him
1375. R: Yeah.
1376. S: why who gives that other school that he goes the right to say () no we don't.
1377. R: Yeah.
1378. S: (1) I'll decide. () No (1) sorry () if it's been put in place at one school it should continue.
1379. R: Yeah.
1380. S: (1) Not them put a block on it.
1381. R: Yeah.
1382. S: (1) Cos now (1) I mean () to be fair I mean I'm totally in the dark. () Because that school is not communicating [with me at all.]
1383. R: [Mm hmm () mm hmm] mm hmm.
1384. S: () And (1) that's not good.
1385. R: Mm hmm.
1386. S: (2) They put dad's address down () as the first address
1387. R: Right.
1388. S: and as a parent (1) but also I work
for X company. (2) If you go (,) with an address that's different on their medical records.

| 1389 | R: [Mmm] |
| 1390 | S: (1) what confusion do you think that's gonna cause? |
| 1391 | R: Yeah yeah. |
| 1393 | R: Yes. |
| 1394 | S: (1) could that cause. |
| 1395 | R: (2) Course yeah. |
| 1396 | S: A lot. |
| 1397 | R: Yeah mm hmm. |
| 1398 | S: (1) So his medical records |
| 1399 | R: Yeah |
| 1400 | S: just not (,) [address] |
| 1401 | R: [Yeah (,) match] |
| 1402 | S: does not match his schools. |
| 1403 | R: Mm hmm. |
| 1404 | S: So I just hope and pray whiliever he's in school |
| 1405 | R: Mmm |
| 1406 | S: (1) that there's nothing serious |
| 1407 | R: Yeah. |
| 1408 | S: where he needs (,) medical treatment |
| 1409 | R: Yeah |
| 1410 | S: and an ambulance called. (,) Because that will (,) affect [the treatment] |
| 1411 | R: [Yes] |
| 1412 | S: he gets. (,) Don't matter that I've explained it. |
| 1413 | R: Yes. |
| 1414 | S: [(Coughs)] (1) They've got (,) they've chose which address I've told him which address on his medical records. (POWER STRUGGLE) |
| 1415 | R: Yeah. |
| 1416 | S: But (1) they're not gonna remember. |
| 1417 | R: Yeah course (1) mm hmm. |
| 1418 | S: (,) It should marry up. |
| 1419 | R: Yeah. |
| 1420 | S: Medical records and (2) |
| 1421 | R: Yeah. |
| 1422 | S: (,) things should marry up (,) so that (,) it doesn't cause anything. |
| 1423 | R: Yeah. |
| 1424 | S: (1) And why is it in this country that things are only learned when deaths |
| 1425 | R: Mmm |
| 1426 | S: occur. |
1427. R: (1) Yeah that’s it. (2).
1428. S: I don’t want to (.) my child to be a 
statistic [in any way shape or form]
1429. R: [Yeah yeah yeah]
1430. S: I’ll be honest with you (.) I nobody 
         wants their child to be [labeled]
1431. R: Yeah
1432. S: with some (.) with anything. (1) But 
un unfortunately (.)
1433. R: Yes
1434. S: attitude is. (.) He don’t want him to 
be labelled. (.) Didn’t want him to wear 
glasses.
1435. R: Right.
1436. S: (.) Didn’t want him to (.) have 
asthma.
1437. R: Right.
1438. S: (1) Don’t want him to go to CAMHS 
(1) and be la [have a la]
1439. R: [OK]
1440. S: as it’s been stated labelled.
1441. R: Ok.
1442. S: (coughs)
1443. R: (1) And has Owen picked up on any 
of that do you think?
1444. S: (1) I recon he has yeah. (.)
1445. R: Mm hmm
1446. S: Because things get discussed with 
him [that shouldn’t be]
1447. R: [Mmm]
1448. S: discussed. (1) This is a person (.) 
when Owen was five years old (.) in xcity 
court
1449. R: Mm
1450. S: (.) to mesel (.) and to my sister (.) 
turned round and said (1) he has told Owen 
(1) stuff that isn’t true. (1) That Owen 
was on pressure (1) 
told a five year old that.
1451. R: Right.
1452. S: (1) I said you don’t do things like 
that. (.) He he don’t need to know.
1453. R: Yeah yeah yeah.
1454. S: Yes he does need to know. (1) 
Security guards came over.
1455. R: Mm hmm
1456. S: [saying] 
their head at things that he were [saying]
1457. R: [Really]
1458. S: Not at me and me sister.
R: Yeah :) yeah yeah
S: (:) And (:) that's acceptable behavior?
R: Yeah (:) mm-hmm.
S: (:) No, it's not.
R: Yeah ...
S: So the best way to describe it (:) a decent human being (:) is by saying that he's done. (:) Letters got sent out to all schools. (:) And I bet if you ask school if they've got a (:) letter saying that I think I'm (:) They'll have it.
R: Yeah.
S: (:) I know. (:) I know Xprimary school got it.
R: Right.
S: (:) I know me doctors have [received it.]
R: [Right.]
S: I know that (:) Xold school (:) received
R: Yes.
S: received one. (1) So what's the chances of Xnew school [having one.]
R: [Mmm] (1) And that's his dad whose (1)
S: Yeah.(:) And there's no need for it.
R: (:) Yeah.
S: But it's the other way round.
R: Yeah.
S: We're equal. (:) But I'm not being treated equal and there's (:) Xnew school
R: Yeah.
S: is certainly not treating me as equal.
R: (1) To his dad do you think or
S: Yes. (2) So if we say (2) there's (:) an inferior and less inferior.
R: Yeah.
S: he's the inferior one he's getting all the information.
R: Yeah.
S: He's getting all the post cards (:) he's getting the [text messages.]
R: [Ok]
S: (1) And I'm (:) not being told [nothing.]
R: [Yeah yeah yeah]
S: (:) So (:) how does that look to [Owen]
S: when he's getting praise from one side (.) and not from another.
R: [Yeah]
S: [I don't know.]
R: Yeah.
S: (. ) So if he's gone to parents evening (.)
R: Mmm
S: and they're telling him how well
he's doing.
R: Mmm
S: (. ) Well (.) I ain't been able to go.
R: Yeah.
S: (. ) How does that have an impact.
R: Yeah.
S: That has an impact on [a kid].
R: [Course] yeah.
S: (. ) I remember as a kid meself (.)
No I'd (.) my parents (.) not wanting to go to
parents evening they didn't always go. (.)
And then this particular day (1) they had a
big argument. (1) I were all upset and I'd
gone (.) absolutely crying [to parent]
R: [Ah]
S: parent's evening. (. ) And then (. ) It
caused a bigger (1) more of an argument
after because (.) all teacher saying how well
I'd done. (. ) I were doing. (1) And (. ) it were
just (. ) absolutely horrendous. (.) (coughs)
(.) I mean (1) ((coughs)) (1) it's one of those
things so (.) I've ((coughs)) I swore down that
(.) when I had my kids (1) they wouldn't go
through (TEACHERS NOT NOTICING WHATS
GOING ON UNDERNEATH. NOT JUST ABOUT
THE GRADES)
R: Yeah yeah yeah.
S: what I (. ) I went through.
R: Yeah.
S: (2) And I'm helpless. (1) You're
right I'm doing exactly what (. ) everything I
possibly can
R: [Yes yeah course]
S: to to main to maintain it (.) But at
some point ( . ) something gives. (.) And that
giving point
R: Mmm
S: were that incident in Xold school.
(. ) If that doesn't (.) raise alarm [bells
somewhere]
R: [Mmm]
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Transcript</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1518</td>
<td>S: what is?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1519</td>
<td>R: Yes. (1) And it wasn’t followed through. (.) In new school like you say.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1520</td>
<td>S: Yeah they’ve stopped it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1521</td>
<td>R: Hmm. (1) How did er so Owen he was only at Xold school then for (.) the first term wasn’t he. (.) [of year of year seven.]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1522</td>
<td>S: [September to December. (.) Yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1523</td>
<td>R: And had he had any other problems that you’re aware of [or]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1524</td>
<td>S: [No.]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1525</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1526</td>
<td>S: That were the first incident and they said that were the first incident.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1527</td>
<td>R: (1) Ok. (1) And how did they put it to you the the swap was (.) how was it sort of (.) presented to you? Was it (.) like a good thing or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1528</td>
<td>S: (.) A bad thing.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1529</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1530</td>
<td>S: (1) There’s now that they can do for him. (1) (coughs) But basically (.) even though (.) I explained he (.) no it’s it’s not (1) acceptable behavior and it’s not acceptable. (2) But (1) that school should have passed the information on.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1531</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1532</td>
<td>S: (1) So that would have helped</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1533</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1534</td>
<td>S: both children it’d have helped the school.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1535</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1536</td>
<td>S: (.) So technically that situation would never have happened.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1537</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1538</td>
<td>S: In hindsight. (.) It may not have happened (.) because they’d have been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1539</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1540</td>
<td>S: kept apart. (2) But also you’ve got (.) what a good footballer he is,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1541</td>
<td>R: Hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1542</td>
<td>S: what a good runner he is. (2) So doing some bragging</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1543</td>
<td>R: Hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1544</td>
<td>S: (1) is not (.) good. (.) Cos Owen he’s wanted for football (.) running. (.) He’s he’s very sporty. I’m not saying that’s a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1545</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1546</td>
<td>S: bad thing. (1) But (.) let him find out for [himself.]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Highlights:**
- Never had any other issues
- Good parents, I know it's not acceptable behavior
- CHN need to learn
- FAP communication
- Protective barrier: ways to protect him
- Not listened in, empowered to angry and confused
- They stopped the 5CMH Support
239

R: [Himself.] (1) Yeah mm hmm.

S: (1) Not lets try sell him

R: Yeah (?) course. (?) How do you think erm (1) Owen felt about the swap? (1) About having to do it and the incident like how do you think he felt afterwards a after the (?) incident had happened?

R: (1) Owen or

S: (: ) His dad.

R: Right.

S: (: ) We all get shown the video (?) together

R: Mmm hhmm.

S: the extended one. (?) Obviously nobody knows ???

R: Yeah (?). Yeah.

S: ((?)) Old teacher and yourself (?) that I presented that video. (?) So the full length one (?) was (1) or (2) I were prepared. (?) Cos I knew the video were gonna get shown so (1) I my response would've still been the same. (?) Er the fact that I've seen it. (?) And (?) it would've still been the same cos it were horrific to be fair.

R: And was Owen watching it with you or

S: Yeah.

R: Right.

S: Er Owen just (?) cried.

R: Aaw.

S: (?) When he saw it. (?) And (?) he (?)

R: Right.

S: As if it its all right.

R: Yeah.

S: But its not ok. (?) At that point (?) he leave him to cry [he's]

R: [Yeah]

S: he's gotta deal with his actions. (?)

R: Right.

S: He got goaded. (1) What are you doing about those children that were goading [him?]?

R: [Yes]

S: (1) Really? (2) Is that the way that we no we don't [do we.]

R: [Yeah,] Yeah.
1576. S: (.) I'm not saying (1) that they were right in goading him. (.) But Owen should have been stronger (WHAT SHE'S SAYING IS WHY IS HE NOT HELPING HIM)
1577. R: Yeah
1578. S: And not gave in.
1579. R: Yes.
1580. S: (1) Owen should have been (1) kinda (.) prepared.
1581. R: Yes.
1582. S: Fair enough no you don't expect anybody be [recording things.]
1583. R: [Mmm]
1584. S: But at end of day (1) technology (.) [we've got it now it's out there.]
1585. R: [Yeah. (1) It's the way it is.]
1586. S: It is. (1) So why hasn't this been done? (.) I mean I remember not being able to go to (1) erm (.) an online (1) safety meet (.) course at school here. (coughs) (1) [She adds] um (.) [Whispers] um (1) But his name (1) [She adds] um (.) (1) He's signed (.) allows him to go on all social media sites he's not on 'em. (.) It's me that's having to monitor.
1587. R: Yeah.
1588. S: And every so often (.) ask Owen for his phone to go through
1589. R: Yeah
1590. S: (.) and say why are you adding people?
1591. R: Mmm
1592. S: Well (1) so and so told me to do it.
1593. R: Mmm
1594. S: No get em off!
1595. R: Yeah yeah.
1596. S: You you do- would you jump off a bridge if somebody asked you to do it?
1597. R: Yeah.
1598. S: (1) That's the same scenario Owen. (1) And it's not (.)
1599. R: Yeah. (.) Do you feel do you think Owen erm (3) sort of when he when he started at Xnew school how do you think he felt (.) you know about not having friends and things do you think he was worried or
1600. S: Yes he would have been yeah.
1601. R: Mm hmm.
1602. S: (.) He he would have been. (1) Yeah not knowing. And (.) they (.) They fluffed it up (.) very nicely.
R: Right.
S: If that makes sense. (1) Erm (.) maybe that could have been (1) Xold school's side of it because (.) obviously (1)
R: Sorry there's not a plug down there is there? (1) Just cos erm (1) this battery's running low thanks. (.) Thank you. (4) Will it fit? (3) Sorry.
S: It's all right don't apologise.
R: (laughs) (1) I Thank you. (7)
S: Erm (.) he will have been worried.
R: Yeah.
S: Erm (.) I think he (1) I think we would have been.
R: Yeah.
S: It's just like starting a (.) [a new job I suppose.]
R: [Yeah course.]
S: But with the incident and (1) the way that another school worked and things it (.) it's (1) that in itself (.) is gonna be daunting.
R: Yeah.
S: Then to err (.) hear (.) a staff member shouting at your [parents]
R: [Mmm]
S: Is (.) daunting.
R: Mmm.
S: And this is after Owen's saying (1) yes (.) whatever's gone on at Xold school is behind us this is a fresh start. That's how I explained it [to Owen.]
R: [Yeah (.) yeah.
S: (.) So (.) one uniform
R: Yeah.
S: one lot of shoes
R: Yeah yeah
S: what?
R: Yeah
S: Do'you
R: Yeah (.) yeah.
S: (.) No (2) Seriously? (1) And (.) fair enough (.) I appreciate why she (.) she shouted and she spoke the way she were (.) and that she sent Owen out of the room. (.) But this is on his meeting to a new school
R: Yes.
S: (.) And they're witnessing (.) yet again.
R: Mm.
1635. R: Yeah.
1636. S: (2) And that's () that's the norm.
1637. R: Mmm. And on your on his [first day.]
1638. S: [On his first day] in Xnew school.
1639. R: (1) Uh huh.
1640. S: So put that () really.
1641. R: Yeah.
1642. S: (1) I'd gone in there with with nothing (1) and just to
1643. R: () Yeah.
1644. S: (.) Just for () the sake of Owen.
1645. R: Yeah.
1646. S: He asked me to be there. () I knew (1) potentially what could happen [because]
1647. R: [Yeah]
1649. R: Yeah.
1650. S: (.) He'll () he won't do that. () No
1651. R: Mmm
1652. S: That poor kid.
1653. R: Yeah.
1654. S: (2) That poor kid cos () he were
1655. R: [Right really] mm hmm
1656. S: Had to have two mobile phones had to go out and buy one.
1657. R: Yeah.
1658. S: (1) But for when he got to Xnew school
1659. R: Yeah.
1660. S: he agreed to one. () And that's the one that he's got [it's the]
1661. R: [Right]
1662. S: iPhone.
1663. R: Right.
1664. S: (1) That's from his dad's [not]
1665. R: [Yeah]
1666. S: the one from here.
1667. R: Yeah. (1) How did you feel after that first meeting then? (1) In school.
1668. S: (.) I come out shaking I were up to be far I were mortified.
1669. R: Mm
1670. S: That she'd had to speak to us in that manner. You can't just speak to one person () you you've got to di [aim it at both people.]
1671. R: [Mmm]
243

1672. S: (.) But it were out of order.
1673. R: Mm.
1674. S: (.) It was out of order. (.) And (.) I weren’t allowing Owen (.) to go and (.) to get changed.
1675. R: Mm.
1676. S: (1.) From (.) his uniform to (.) my uniform. It’s not fair. (.) Shouldn’t happen. (1.) But I have noticed (.) and it he is coming up for his dad (.) that (.) I went out and spend two hundred and fifty quid it’s not (.) about the money. (1.) To kit Owen out [for]
1677. R: [Mm hmm]
1678. S: school.
1679. R: Mm.
1680. S: For Xold school.
1681. R: Mm hmm.
1682. S: (1.) And er (.) his dad said (.) something so I sent one back saying (.) it’s cost me two hundred and fifty pounds for his uniform (.) Are you paying a hundred and twenty five pound (.) towards it. (.) I I knew I’d get [no.]
1683. R: [Yeah]
1684. S: (2.) But I didn’t get a no. (.) I got (.)
1685. R: Oh ((sighs)).
1686. S: (2.) Well why (.) not tell me?
1687. R: Yeah yeah yeah [that communication again]
1688. S: [He only needs one.] (.) And then
1689. R: Yeah.
1690. have two?
1691. R: Mm hmm.
1692. S: (.) It’s not.
1693. R: Yeah.
1694. S: (2.) No I didn’t get no money. (.) Er (.) when (.) cos he bought Xnew school one. (1.) Er (.) so ?? (1.) but (2.) I can stand (1.) I I having this distance [apart.]
1695. R: [Mm hmm]
1696. S: (1.) But I can’t hear the conversation that you’re having with Owen.
1697. R: Mm
1698. S: And I’m not deaf.
1699. R: Mm.
1700. S: Why’s that. (3.) All (.) all I see (1.) is
244

1701. R: Right.
1702. S: (3) I've been in McDonald's (.) with [stuff like that.]
1703. R: [Yeah (.) yeah.]
1704. S: And he thinks it's acceptable (.) [acceptable.]
1705. R: [Yeah.]
1706. S: (1) And I'm getting (.) I don't
1707. [Owen].
1708. R: [Yeah course.]
1709. S: (.) But that's my weak link (in it)
1710. R: [Yeah]
1711. S: cos I see that (1) So I (.) technically
1712. [Owen].
1713. R: Mmm
1714. S: (1) I mean after talking to
1715. R: Mmm.
1716. S: (1) I mean talking to
1717. R: [Mm]
1718. S: (.) I don't want that confrontation
1719. R: Yes. (1) Well that's understandable
1720. S: (2) But (1) obviously that (.) now I
1721. R: Yeah. (1) And I suppose you (1) do
1722. S: (1) Yeah he got he got (1) I'm not
1723. R: Yeah.
1724. S: I'll be honest with you (.) Erm (1)
1725. R: Mm
1726. S: (1) Er and so (.) it's happened a few
1727. times but the worst he's been (1) I threatened to put him over me legs and...
1727. R: Mm
1729. R: Yeah.
1730. S: (1) That were my point of saying (2) carry on because you (1) you're over
1731. R: Yes.
1732. S: (1) D'you d'you know what I mean (1) and (1) how d'you (3) I find myself in a situation where (.) I don't know (.) how to (3) tell him that he's (1) been naughty. (.) And how to (1) manage it (.) properly.
1733. R: Mm.
1734. S: That's because (2) he once said to me (2) you're always angry you.
1735. R: Mm. (.) Who Owen did?
1736. S: Yeah. (.) So I says (1) am I?
1737. R: Mm hmm.
1738. S: D'you want to explain to me (1) what I do when I'm angry. (4) And he thought about it. (1) And he went (.) I can't. (1) I went why and he went (1) cos I've not seen you angry. (.) I went why say it then.
1739. R: Mm.
1740. S: (1) And I knew he'd not seen me [angry.]
1741. R: [Yeah] yeah.
1742. S: (1) And (.) to this day (.) he hasn't seen me angry.
1743. R: Yeah.
1744. S: In fact me daughter's nearly 21 and
1745. R: Yeah.
1746. S: ([laughs]) she's not seen [me angry.]
1747. R: [Yeah yeah.]
1748. S: So I know full well that (.) we all get angry. (.) But we all (.) can manage it. (.) And I can manage my anger.
1749. R: Yeah.
1750. S: (1) I mean (1) it was nowt worse (1) the other day this is the kind of person he is.
1751. R: Mmm.
1752. S: I have to get my holidays in. (1) Er (.) for next year (.) round about February March time.
1753. R: Mm.
1754. S: And then it can be get rejected and (.) actually that's what happened. (1) So they got rejected. (2) Er I told 'em what I were going for they got rejected. (.) And then I (.) told them what I got given so I let him know.
| 1755 | R: mmm hmm  |
| 1756 |  |
| 1757 | R: Mmm hmm. |
| 1758 | S: school holidays. (1) Er (2) that (1) he’s already told me which he’s not told me. (.) And he’s actually gone (?) for one of my weeks. |
| 1759 | R: Right. |
| 1760 | S: So I (1) how it’s worded (.) it’s not clear. (1) This (.) letter. (.) And it is (.) open for argument. |
| 1761 | R: Right. |
| 1762 | S: So I’ve I’ve ignored it. (.) And I will get back. (1) I’ve managed to get work to change (.) it. (.) And I’ve got a feeling that (1) because they put nineteen inclusive which means technically (.) you can argue that it’s (.) the week commencing nineteenth (.) or it’s just the [day nineteenth.] |
| 1763 | R: [Yes yes.] |
| 1764 | S: It’s not clear [at all.] |
| 1765 | R: [Yes.] |
| 1766 | S: (1) So (.) the wee that they’ve given me given me (.) is the nineteenth. (1) So (.) let’s wait and (.) wait and see (.) if I’ve got |
| 1767 | R: Mmm hmm  |
| 1768 | S: If he (.) is that then he’s going for three week. (.) which (1) is not what the |
| 1769 | R: [Mmm.] |
| 1770 | S: So it’s only as and when it suits him |
| 1771 | R: yeah. |
| 1772 | S: That we come away from the end of the year [2] the end of the year (.) where it gets suspended term time. (.) But they’ve not adhered to that. (2) And I’ve (.) I’ve asked how does it work. (1) I mean Owen’s 12. (2) It’s a bit pointless (.) doing (.) or picking up on Christmas day. |
| 1773 | R: Mmm. |
| 1774 | S: (.) Why not (.) do what other people [do and have it (.) separate day.] |
| 1775 | R: [Yeah (1) course.] |
| 1776 | S: Two hours on his birthday you can’t do now [in two hours.] |
| 1777 | R: [Needs to be] convenient yeah. |
| 1778 | S: (.) Yeah. (.) He’s old enough now (.) let him have [two] |
1779.  R: [Yeah]
1780.  S: different birthdays.
1781.  R: Yeah.
1782.  S: (1) I'll be honest with you (.) his never spent one Easter with me.
1783.  R: Has he not.
1784.  S: (.) So (.) isn't Easter as important as Christmas?
1785.  R: Yeah.
1786.  S: Which it is.
1787.  R: Course.
1788.  S: (1) So he's had to learn to (.) do (.) Easter.
1789.  R: Yeah.
1790.  S: differently. (1) And (2) No I mean last year (.) he went to his dad's (1) 12 O'clock on Christmas day.
1791.  R: Mm hmm.
1792.  S: (1) Came back (1) a week later (2) He only had time to open his presents. (.)
1793.  R: Mmm.
1794.  S: Not had time to play with them.
1795.  R: Yeah.
1796.  S: Had a good look at 'em. (1) is that fair.
1797.  R: Yeah [course.]
1798.  S: [No] (.) it's not.
1799.  R: Yeah yeah.
1800. 
1801.  R: No [no no .]
1802.  S: [the situation.]
1803.  R: Yeah.
1804.  S: (1) Schools don't understand it.
1805.  R: Yeah. (3) And they wouldn't necessarily know the impact that it has.
1806.  S: 
1807.  R: Yeah
1808.  S: (.) er (1) treat both pe- er (.) parents (.) [equally.]
1809.  R: [Yeah]
1810.  S: And then (.) they use the (1) lame excuse it's the system. (2) I'm saying lame excuse because I'm sure there's a work around.
1811.  R: Yeah yeah yeah.
1812.  S: (.) If not if it (.) if it manually
1813.  R: Mm hmm
1814.  S: picking that phone up then
1815.  R: Mm hmm
1816.  S: (.) or (.) manually [writing a post card out]
248

1817. R: [Mm hmmm]
1818. S: (1) Do it! [That’s what I]
1819. R: [Course]
1820. S: do.
1821. R: Yeah.
1822. S: (.) For my (.) when I’m w
1823. R: Yeah.
1824. S: working. (.) I will go that extra mile
1825. (.) I’ve done it (.) all me life in me jobs.
1826. R: Yeah.
1827. S: And I’ll never stop now I’ve done it
1828. for (.) when I were scouting.
1829. R: Mm
1830. S: I’ll do it for the parents even
1831. though I know I’m busy. (1) If somebody
1832. needs help
1833. R: Yes
1834. S: don’t matter who it is (.) I’ll help.
1835. (1) I (2) dog sitting. (.) D’you d’you know
1836. what I [mean.]
1837. R: [Yeah.]
1838. S: There’s (.) various things that I’m
1839. (1) I’ll do.
1840. R: Yeah.
1841. S: (.) I can’t always do it.
1842. R: Yeah.
1843. S: But
1844. R: You do it when you can.
1845. S: (.) Yeah. (.) But I won’t say (.) [no.]
1846. R: [Yeah]
1847. S: And I certainly wouldn’t put
1848. barriers [in somebody’s]
1849. R: [Yeah]
1850. S: way. (1) If he were to come to me
1851. (1) and say (1) d’you know what Sarah (2)
1852. erm (.) can I have Owen [there’s something
1853. going on]
1854. R: [Mm hmm mmm hmmm]
1855. S: (1) Then that’s fine.
1856. R: [Yeah. (2) And you expect the same.
1857. S: (1) I do. (.) I mean I (1) when I lost
1858. my erm (2) step dad (.) I phoned him up (.)
1859. and I erm (.) asked him if he would have
1860. Owen (.) for the [funeral]
1861. R: [Mm]
1862. S: give him additional time (.)
1863. overnight.
1864. R: Yeah yeah.
1865. S: I didn’t take time away from him.
1866. R: Yeah.
1867. S: (2) But then I got well what’s he
1868. died of (4) like (1) he wanted to come
through one night. (1) And I were working I were actually working while nine o'clock I can't tell him I'm working.

R: Mmm

1854. S: while nine o'clock (.) because (.) he's turned up at work before.

R: Mmm

1856. S: till that time. (1) Yeah (.) but why? (2) I should be able to tell him right.

R: Right.

1858. S: till (1) that time. (1) Yeah (.) but why? (2) I should be able to tell him right.

R: Course yeah (.) you shouldn't have to prove anything.

S: But I can't (.) because he's not (1)

R: Yeah.

1862. S: Nicest person.

R: Yeah.

1864. S: And it (.) it all (.) depends (.) and I (.)

R: get a partner cos I thought it'd be worse. (2) Really?

1865. R: Mmm

1866. S: And I didn't believe them. (1) Why didn't I believe them? Cos I couldn't get (1) but they're right. (1) They are right. (3) And it's (3) cos I suppose (.) to use we've got it in our

R: Yeah.

1868. S: (2) It it can't get any worse it can only get better [when]

R: [Yeah]

1870. S: they find somebody else cos they've got somebody else.

R: yeah.

1872. S: and I don't believe them.

R: yeah.

1874. S: But no.

R: (1) It hasn't happened that way.

1877. S: No.

R: [Yeah mmm.

1879. S: No. (1) I want a quiet life.

R: yeah.

1881. S: (1) I don't I don't want a (.)

R: [Yeah yeah yeah yeah yeah]

1882. S: Corrination Street [or Emmerdale]?

R: [Yeah yeah yeah yeah yeah]

1883. S: Do you know what I mean?

R: Yeah course.
1886.  S: If I wanted that (.) I've signed up to
1887.  R: ([laughs]) yeah
1888.  S: play a role ([laughs]) (2) I want (.)
       quiet life.
1889.  R: Yeah
1890.  S: Drama free there's (.) there's no
       need
1891.  R: No course.
1892.  S: But more importantly (.) there's
certainly no need for a kid to be dragged in it.
1893.  R: No course. (1) What would you say
       your sort of hopes are for Owen for like (.)
you know his next few years and in school?
1894.  S: (3) I hope that (3) he (1) stays out
       of trouble and (1) I hope that (.) at some
       point (.) he'll see (1) that (1) the people that
       he's knocking around with (1) are (.) wrong.
1895.  R: Mmm mmm
1896.  S: And (1) I just hope he's not gonna
       be (.) a black sheep and a follower.
1897.  R: Mmm
1898.  S: like me daughter was. (2) Erm (1)
       (4) but (1) because he can't afford to make
       any mistakes
1899.  R: Mmm
1900.  S: he can't stick up for himself.
1901.  R: Mmm
1902.  S: So technically (1) he's got no choice
       but to be a black sheep and a follower.
1903.  R: Mmm
1904.  S: (4) So we've not he's not (.) been
       given a good start to secondary school.
1905.  R: Yeah
1906.  S: Really (3) when we look at the
       background (1) the history (1) this is not (.) I
       know it's not discussed in a meeting (1) but
       when (.) we look at all that (2) and (1)
       questions should have been asked why
       school wellbeing service (3) Xnew school
       should have allowed it to continue. (1)
       Clearly so (.) [in my opinion]
1907.  R: [The intervention] work?
1908.  S: Yeah. (1) And it (.) it were only
       round about his emotional
1909.  R: Yeah
1910.  S: side. (2) Identified he can't deal
       with emotion.
1911.  R: Yeah
1912.  S: Obviously we know that's (.) upset
1913.  R: Yeah
1914.  S: that's anger
1915.  R: Yeah
| 1916. | S: that's [frustration]. |
| 1917. | R: [Yeah] |
| 1918. | S: (2) Happiness sadness |
| 1919. | R: yeah |
| 1920. | S: (3) I can’t see how that would’ve hurt |
| 1921. | R: [Yeah] |
| 1922. | S: Owen in any way shape or form. |
| 1923. | R: Yeah. |
| 1924. | S: And how it would have hurt school. |
| 1925. | R: To have some support. ( ) And is |
| 1926. | that something that you would like him ( ) |
| 1927. | ideally to (1) be able to access it in school? |
| 1928. | (2) if in an ideal situation. |
| 1929. | R: [Mmmmm] |
| 1930. | S: (1) As much as he agreed with [ ] |
| 1931. | he didn’t want it to happen. |
| 1932. | R: Mmm. |
| 1933. | S: got two choices. (4) We (2) if we see this |
| 1934. | thing happening (1) and we’ve got ways and |
| 1935. | means to (2) help a child ( ) isn’t it better to |
| 1936. | help that child? ( ) Whether one parent |
| 1937. | agrees |
| 1938. | S: or both parent agrees or neither |
| 1939. | [one of them agrees] |
| 1940. | R: [Yeah] |
| 1941. | S: Cos at some point (1) |
| 1942. | R: What’s best for the child [isn’t it] |
| 1943. | S: [Exactly] ( ) This these children ( ) |
| 1944. | will be in that ( ) big wide world ( ) And it’s a |
| 1945. | case of ( ) sink or swim. |
| 1946. | R: Mmm hmm. |
| 1947. | S: Isn’t it better that (1) take ( ) if |
| 1948. | we’re in that position ( ) decisions ( ) and |
| 1949. | steps ( ) and it becomes a success story |
| 1950. | because they ( ) they’ve swim and they’ve |
| 1951. | not sank ( ) and they’ve not gone down the |
| 1952. | route of. |
| 1953. | R: [Yeah] |
| 1954. | S: all the other children |
| 1955. | R: yeah |
| 1956. | S: because ( ) Let’s be honest ( ) |
| 1957. | children are not getting a good name. |
| 1958. | R: [Yeah] ( ) that’s it.
1946. S: And it comes down to (.) the upbringing of a child
1947. R: mm hmm
1948. S: That's where it blames
1949. R: Mm hmm.
1950. S: But in this aspect who would you blame?
1951. R: Mm hmm.
1952. 
1953. R: Yeah.
1954. S: (2) But (.) obviously (.) whether he implements that (.) that video shows that
1955. R: 
1956. S: I would never (.) have done that.
1957. R: Mm hmm
1958. S: Do you know what I mean?
1959. R: Mm hmm.
1960. S: But (.) there's (3) I think there's (1) further steps (.) if I (.) if I were able to
1961. R: Yeah
1962. S: (.) work with schools (1) and look at (.) children (.) and be in that kind of role (1)
1963. R: Yeah
1964. S: to do. (1) And look at the way (1) that children are behaving and the reasons why
1966. S: Because it don't (.) not everybody's
1967. R: Mmmin
1968. notified school.
1969. R: Yeah (.) and how old was Owen when (.) when you left his dad then?
1970. S: It were back in 2009.
1972. S: So Owen was (1) three.
1974. 
1975. R: Right.
1976. S: ??? (.) for me (1) using her to pass
1977. ___________ and
1979. R: (2) Yes.
1980. S: All (...) all the signs are there (2) it's whether we want to listen (1) and (2) help.
1981. R: (1) Yes.
1982. S: Or we'll just (2) sit back and see what happens [and if]
1983. R: [Yeah]
1984. S: it's a time bomb waiting to go off.
1985. R: (1) And (1) what would you say has (1) would you say there's anything that's been helpful (1) in the process?
1986. S: (3) Er (1) no. (2) No. (2) Because (1) if Owen had have had his own (2) education (1) if we if we put it to (1) this way. (1) If Owen sinks into his (1) we'll say (1) world
1987. R: Mm hmm
1988. S: Where (1) that's in school (1) and (1) it's a distraction
1990. S: (2) then that were taken away from him for (1) that length of time.
1992. S: So (...) it had a (...) impact.
1994. S: The fact (1) I (2) me and me sister actually had him out. (1) I'm not gonna lie to you. (1) Erm (2) and he were learning various things.
1995. R: Mmm
1996. S: So (...) if he went up to us and (1) with hot tub (1) we made it (1) doing science and
1997. R: Mmm
1998. S: regarding chemicals and things. (1) And looking at signs and (1) various (1) various stuff. There's only so much (1) you can do (1) at home.
1999. R: Course
2000. S: with now resources [from school.]
2002. S: Obviously (...) it's different from secondary school to primary school. (1) And I (...) I can't tell you how many (...) changes (...) from (1) me being a school
2003. R: Mmm
2004. S: to me daughter being at school. (1) And then (...) me daughter being at school
2005. R: Mmm
2006. S: to Owen
2043. R: ((laughs)) yeah yeah.
2044. S: And Owen gets that [from me]
2045. R: [Yeah,]
2046. S: So (.) if it’s not entertaining or (.) something
2047. R: Yeah.
2048. S: that (.) keeps you [going]
2049. R: [course] yeah
2050. S: and it’s something that you’re interested in (.) you ain’t gonna listen.
2051. R: No. (.) It’s not gonna go in. (1)
What would you say your sort of like long term hopes are for Owen (.) like (.) when he finishes school?
2052. S: (3) To (1) do what makes him happy
2053. R: Mm hhm.
2054. S: and (1) not be pressurized [into doing something]
2055. R: [Mmmmm]
2057. R: Yeah.
2058. S: Erm (1) because (2) lets not forget this is (2) children in this situation (3) are pressurized.
2059. R: Mmm
2060. S: (1) You see (.) I can speak from (.) I were pressurized as a kid. (2) But the per- if I’m honest (2) I’m not only one who were pressurized by me parents.
2061. R: Mmm hhm.
2062. S: Or school. (2) I also pressurized meself.
2063. R: Mmm
2064. S: (2) And (1) that caused me to (1) have epilepsy
2065. R: Mmmmm
2066. S: So (1) I know (.) obviously (1) and I were in a (.) bad state
2067. R: Mmm
2068. S: what that (.) causes. (1) So (1) I learned (1) obviously school (.) we know school (2) isn’t (.) and I’m not saying (.) it’s negative that they pressurize kids (1) but if you get it from all angles.
2069. R: Yeah.
2070. S: it takes its toll.
2071. R: Yes.
2072. S: (1) So (.) knowing that from me being a kid (1) I didn’t put too much pressure on my (1) daughter (1) but I did (.) obviously encourage her to do her homework (.) got to
do her homework (.) and study [for exams].

2073. R: [Yeah (.) yeah]

2074. S: There's only so much you can do. (1) Obviously (.) that's without (.) going heavy handed.

2075. R: Mm mm.

2076. S: (1) And (1) I do say with Owen (2) I mean (.) he has some homework today (.) erm ( .) geography. (1) And He says (1) he didn't know what it were he couldn't remember and he had to speak to his geography teacher [which]

2077. R: [Mmm]

2078. S: I thought were unusual.

2079. R: Mmm

2080. S: Cos I've always helped (.) Owen with his homework (2) but he wouldn't even

2081. R: Ok. (1) [show]

2082. S: [show]

2083. R: you it to you (.) mm mm.

2084. S: (. ) Yeah. (. ) Wouldn't even give me an inkling what it was

2085. R: Right.

2086. S: about. (1) Which (2) is unusual.

2087. R: Right.

2088. S: It's first one (.) he's ever

2089. R: yeah.

2090. S: done. (2) Now (2) it's like i've always said to Owen (2) now you're (1) you're in that next week (1) you've got (.) that homework to do and others to catch up on.

2091. R: Yeah.

2092. S: (2) So (.) why (1) did he not (1) recall (2) or is that a lie. (1) And (1) if I'm honest (1) I think it's a lie.

2093. R: Mm mm.

2094. S: (3) Cos he knows I'm more than happy

2095. R: To help him

2096. S: (1) If I (.) like I say I don't know answer (.) [research it.]

2097. R: [Yeah] (1) What do you think's going on there then why do you think he's done that?

2098. S: (2) I don't know.

2099. R: Mmm

2100. S: Could be something that his dad can help him with.

2101. R: Right. (2) Mm mm.

2102. S: (1) If it's (1) anything hands on (3) he would go to his dad.
2103. R: Right
2104. S: But he should know
2105. R: Yes
2106. S: that that isn't a problem with me
2107. R: Yeah.
2108. S: (1) Do you do you know what I mean. (1) Erm (2) I don't know.
2109. R: Mmm hmm mm hmm (;) It's unusual for him
2110. S: (1) Yeah.
2111. R: (1) Yeah.
2112. S: (1) But he were forgetting his homework but he's come back (1) erm (2)
2113. R: Right.
2114. S: But (2) if his dad's (1) hands (1) bit
2115. R: Yeah course.
2116. S: that's what Owen's saying.
2118. S: I (:) I signed it because
2119. R: Yes
2120. S: (:) Yeah yeah yeah
2121. S: And (:) we've gotta understand it
2122. R: (1) and kinda (:) I've gotta (:) be respectful to him. (1) So I've also signed a planner this week. (:) Not to (1) kinda (2) push him out
2123. R: Yeah. (1) Cos you're trying to help.
2124. S: Trying to help. (1) He's got cross country forms I I know his dad wouldn't say no
2125. R: yeah
2126. S: I've filled the medical forms in
2127. R: Yes
2128. S: I've I've filled them in. (;) I'm not saying they aint got nobody else to fill them but (;) when I looked at the dates (;) there were only one date that's same that which is this [Wednesday]
2129. R: [Mmm]
2130. S: (1) The other two dates were mine.
2131. R: [Mmm hmm]
2132. S: What's the point in (2) messing about
2133. R: Yeah [course]
2134. S: [Owen's] gonna remember
2135. R: Yeah.
2136. S: So (;) at least he's got them filled in
2137. R: Yeah
2138. S: and signed does it matter [who fills the form out]
2139. R: [Yeah. (.) yeah] Yeah course.
2140. S: As long as it’s got the correct information on
2141. R: Yeah yeah yeah (.) course.
2142. S: But (.) yeah it does.
2143. R: Mmm ([laughs])
2144. S: (1) But (.) even though so (.) I’ve done it to be helpful
2145. R: Yes [not everybody sees it that way]
2146. S: [that’s not how it’s gonna]
2147. R: of course
2148. S: it’s not gonna be portrayed that way (1) no it’s not. (1) And (.) it’s just one of those things (.) I’m not gonna win
2149. R: Yeah
2151. R: Yeah (.) yeah.
2152. S: (.) it’s not (1) a competition.
2153. R: No
2154. S: But it don’t matter (.) me trying to be helpful or not (.) it’s not gonna be seen that way.
2155. R: Mmm hmm.
2156. S: And it’s (.) it’s Owen.
2157. R: Mmm
2158. S: That’s at the heart: (1) I hope (1) Owen will continue with the strength
2159. R: Yeah.
2160. S: that he’s got.
2161. R: Yeah.
2162. S: (2) Er (2) continue (2) and if he’s (.) going on that wrong path
2163. R: Mmm
2164. S: see (.) error of his ways (.) and makes (.) a correction.
2165. R: Well it sounds as if he’s getting good (.) input from you.
2166. S: (3) But I’m not with him 24/7 (2) so
2167. R: Mmm hmm
2168. S: It’s (1) if I’m honest (3) if somebody
2169. R: Yeah
2170. S: if that makes sense. (1) It’s not
...about me controlling the children.

Z273. R. [Yeah.]

Z208. S: [And if it's not gonna be this year...]
Z209. R: [Yeah.]
Z210. S: [That's all I can hope for.]
Z211. R: [And (1) time will tell with school home with that much homework.]...
S: And if it just (.) intensifies a little bit
R: Mmm
S: it certainly will be year ten and
eleven.
R: Yeah
S: (1) And they're (.) they will be
[those]
R: [GCSEs]
S: Yeah. (1) So it's a shame you (.) if
you could only see
R: Yeah.
S: (2) Through the years (1) if it
actually does (.) work.
R: Yes (2) yeah exactly. (1) Cos like
you say he's been there since January and (.)
still at sort of early days really isn't it.
S: (1) Yeah. (1) And there have been
incidents.
R: Yeah.
S: And whether they tell you or not
(1) there have.
R: Yeah yeah.
S: And (.) he's not exactly (.) Mr
innocent [at all.]
R: [No] no (.) Well it's really useful for
me to get everybody's perspective obviously
for that reason. (1) Erm (.) cos there's never
just one side of a story.
S: (1) No. (.) And it's like I said (1) the
PE teacher shouldn't have (.) put the onus on
the children (.) he should have taken
accountability. (1) Erm (1) so if he'd have (1)
took accountability (.) would that situation
have occurred?
R: Mmm.
S: (1) Cos chances are no it wouldn't
have occurred.
R: Mmm
S: Because he said so and so you're in
nets
R: Mmm
S: So and so you're out of net. (2)
That diffuses any situation.
R: Yes
S: That's created (.) a situation
R: yes
S: in my book. And I'm not defending
R: Yeah
S: But at end of day (1) like I said to
Owen (1) he shouldn't have opened his
mouth (.) he should have kept his mouth
shut.
2239. R: Mm hmm
2240. S: (2) He were making his (2) point (.)
   he were showing
2241. R: Mmm
2242. S: (1) to a degree (1) his (1) his
   arrogance.
2243. R: Yeah.
2244. S: (1) That’s not but that’s not my
   arrogance.
2245. R: Yeah
2246. S: (2) I can only (. I (. you can say I’m
   pointing finger (2) but I can tell you (1) if I like
   you or not.
2247. R: Mmm
2248. S: I don’t I don’t have to (2) be clever
   about it.
2249. R: Yes [just the way it is.]
2250. S: [There’s (. there’s ways and
   means] isn’t there [yeah.]
2251. R: [Yeah] (1) yeah.
2252. S: (1) Just like 2 (. If you were to say
   something I don’t like
2253. R: Mmm
2254. S: (1) Er sorry (1) did you mean it in
   that way?
2255. R: Yeah.
2256. S: Do you (. there’s there’s ways and
   means .
2257. R: Course
2258. S: And I appreciate he’s only a kid
   (and]
2259. R: [Yes]
2260. S: he’s gotta learn.
2261. R: Learn yeah.
2262. S: But when he’s got this big thing
   hanging over [him]
2263. R: [Yeah]
2264. S: that he’s gonna get kicked out can
   get kicked out
2265. R: Yeah
2266. S: of a school then (1)
2267. R: He’s it’s uncertain.
2268. S: It (.) it’s only going to (1) erm (.) I
   know it as (. naughty kids school.
2269. R: Mmm
2270. S: (2) What else can I
2271. R: Mmm
2272. S: tell this (. ) kid to do?
2273. R: Mmm
2274. S: (1) These are the years (1) he
   should be learning this stuff. (.) Under
   secondary school.
R: Mm hmm
S: (1) And we've like stripped that away from him.
R: Mm hmm (2) mm hmm
S: So where's he gonna learn it?
R: Yeah (1) No I understand that definitely. (2) Erm (1) do you think there's anything that we've (1) sorry I'm just erm (1) I'm just aware that (1) I don't wanna take up too much of your time (1) information (1). Do you think there's anything else that we've not talked about that you think's sort of important for me to know about in terms of (1) you know there's the swap or
S: I think it's all school orientated.
R: Mm
S: I don't think it's focused about pupils.
R: Mm hmm mm hmm
S: Obviously this is me
R: Yeah
S: with Owen. (2) There were no thought and consideration [into]
R: [Yeah]
S: Owen's education (1) or (1) how he the upset that that had caused.
R: Yeah
S: (2) I'm not (1) the impact on parents (1) that's not (2) what it's about.
R: Yeah.
S: (1) It's about (1) Owen. (1) Or that child.
R: (1) Mm hmm.
S: (1) If that meeting were that day when they made that decision (1) why couldn't they physically (1)
R: Yeah
S: have a conversation. (4) Why do they need to prepare?
R: Yeah.
S: (3) Cos isn't it to me isn't it just a case of (1) this is why (1) we're (1) looking for a SWAP
R: Mm hmm
S: what school's gonna take [him]
R: Mm hmm
S: (1) So to speak. (1) And I (1) I know there's probably more to it than that.
R: Mmm
S: don't get me wrong.
2306. S: But
2307. R: Why should there be really though

(laughs)
2308. S: The the focus is on that kid how
and how soon can we get him in.
2309. R: Yes
2310. S: Right. (.) Who’s contacting
[parents]
2311. R: [Yes]
2312. S: (2) And (.) take it [from there]
2313. R: [Yeah]
2314. S: and (.) instead of it being (.)
longwinded.
2315. R: Yes. (1) And not not knowing
what’s going on.
2316. S: Yeah. (.) Cos there’s nowt worse
than not knowing.
2317. R: Yeah.
2318. S: (2) There were nowt worse than (1)
the lengthy periods of him
2319. R: Yeah
2320. S: (1) one hour a day [and that were
just]
2321. R: [Yeah course]
2322. S: to get his marks so he got 100 %
2323. R: Yeah yeah (.) No I understand that
2324. S: But (.) what I do find (1) and as far
as I’m aware
2325. R: Mm
2326. S: is with (.) year 7 is (2) er (.) Owen
got no (.) rewards for his attendance or (.)
behaviors that’s as I’m aware. (.) If you were
to speak to school they might tell you
different
2327. R: Ok
2328. S: (1) but as far as I’m aware he came
away with nothing.
2329. R: Ok.
2330. S: (2) But yet in year 8 (1) they start
having graduation through year so why not
have graduation [in year]
2331. R: [right]
2332. S: seven?
2333. R: Yeah
2334. S: (3) But Owen’s still learning that
school
2335. R: Yes
2336. S: (2) It’s gonna take me longer to
learn that school
2337. R: yeah
2338. S: cos I’m (.) to kept in the dark.
2339. R: Yeah yeah yeah (.) Mm hmm
2340. S: You don't get a report like you do primary school [saying]
2341. R: [No]
2342. S: (1) and I (1) appreciate that they copy and paste and change names (.) but (.) how well he's behaving
2343. R: Mmm hmmm
2344. S: It's until the incident (1) when I realized that I weren't getting phone calls
2345. R: Mmm
2346. S: and I (.) the teacher off his own back (.) German teacher who's now left (1) left me a lovely voice mail (1) telling me how well (.) and how proud of Owen he is. (.) to say (.) he's classed as behind.
2347. R: Right
2348. S: Cos he's never done German. (3) Er (.) so it (.) from that aspect it is (1) good
2349. R: Mmm hmmm
2350. S: But (2) it's a shame that they all can't
2351. R: Yeah
2352. S: Take that lead.
2353. R: Course.
2354. S: Why can't they all (.) get the post [cards]
2355. R: [Yeah] yeah (. j) yeah
2356. S: Why can't we keep (.) both parents informed
2357. R: [Yeah] yeah.
2358. S: (1) But for me it don't even stop there. (.) Cos he gets a (.) free bus pass.
2359. R: Right.
2360. S: (.) So (.) I got refused the bus pass he'd had it before [he'd had it before]
2361. R: [Mmm]
2362. S: And I got accused of moving (2) they'd got his dad's address down
2363. R: Yeah.
2364. S: Then (.) I chose the fifth furthest school away (3) no. (2) That [bus pass]
2365. R: [It's not how it worked]
2366. S: that bus pass come late. (.) There were no notification [that]
2367. R: [Yeah]
2368. S: I weren't (.) allowed it cos obviously I'd have challenged it sooner.
2369. R: Mmm
2370. S: (1) But it has (1) a big impact [on]
2371. R: [yes]
2372. S: absolutely everything.
2373. R: Yeah. (. j) Yeah no I can understand
that definitely. (3) Ok. (...) Well that’s all really helpful shall we (1) pause it for (...) today? (laughs)

2374. S: Yeah (...) if you’ve got any more questions feel free to come back (laughs))

2375. R: Thank you (...) erm (1) yeah no that’s really helpful.

2376. TOTAL TIME 2:02

Exhausting for her trying to advocate for him, trying to be a good parent

Asking for the help feels like needs to reassure she is a good person

- KEY POINTS
- FAP - WE NEED FLEXIBLE APPROACH THAT IS IN CHILD INTEREST

Communication
  Working together
  Exhausting trying to be the advocate
  Walking on eggshells/owing under pressure.

CHILD NEED TO LEARN NOT JUST BE PUNISHED - JUST A KID

Decisions affected fam. Relations

SCHOOL IS HIS REFUGE. (MISSED EDUCATION)

Let down by professionals get help

DIFFICULT BACKGROUND. (O) I’ll be honest - repeated

"Weren’t not expect" let’s do this together. (O) Communication - School needs to look @

bigger picture
e. **Miss Williams interview 1 with analysis**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Transcript</th>
<th>Analysis</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. R: So yeah I mean do you want to just start from the beginning of (1) or wherever you think’s a good place to start?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. W: So (.) Owen came through Fair Access Panel</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. R: Mm hmm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. W: Erm (.) er I spoke to prior to the (.) the meeting I spoke to the vice principal at Xold school which is [the school that he was at].</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. R: [Oh yeah.]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. W: Now (.) he explained the incident of erm because (.) they were (.) they were looking at a possible permanent exclusion.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. R: Right.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. W: Erm (.) and it was the back end of just one (.) one off incident</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. R: Yeah.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. W: Erm which is really rare to be honest</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. R: Yeah.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. W: that any school would make that decision. (.) When I spoke to him he said (.) when he viewed the CCTV footage it was erm Owen assaulting another child</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. R: Mm hmm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14. W: but he said it was one of the worst ones he’d seen</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15. R: Oh ok (.) right.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16. W: for the (.) for the age of Owen (.) erm he he what he said he witnessed was erm (.) Owen had erm he’d had a fight with this other boy (.) got him to the ground (.) but then what he did was he consistently stamped on his head (once)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17. R: [Right].</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18. W: once the other student was on the ground. (.) Obviously I haven’t seen the footage myself but erm MrX who is the Vice Principal had said it was one of the worst incidents he’d seen</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19. R: mm hmm</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20. W: particularly for that year group because he was only year seven at the time</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21. R: Right.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22. W: but it was only part way through year seven so he must have only been (.) about half way through</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23. R: Yeah</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24. W: through his year seven.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25. R: Mm hmm.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
26. W: (1) Erm (1) and then when (1) they first then cos Fair Access Panel just erm they decide [which school]
27. R: [Mm]
28. W: you're going to () and they put us down as their first choice.
29. R: Right.
30. W: And when erm (1) the decision was made (1) erm I got parents in (1) the day after with Owen (1) erm (1) quite a strange meeting really because [erm]
31. R: [mm]
32. W: (1) parents couldn't they don't they don't live together they're separated.
33. R: [Yeah].
34. W: Erm () and they I think they frequently (1) argue.
35. R: Yeah.
36. W: They have disagreements in front of Owen.
37. R: Mm hmm.
38. W: In the end what I did was I sent him out of the meeting ()
39. R: Mm
40. W: er because it's supposed to be () whenever you're integrating a child into your school that's come through those systems.
41. R: [Yeah]
42. W: (1) you have to try and be positive)
43. R: Course.
44. W: And it's really hard cos a lot of the time you know that they're coming with issues.
45. R: Yeah.
46. W: () and you know that they might bring your school some issues.
47. R: Yeah.
48. W: Erm (2) it was really hard to try and be positive er (1) mum and dad were just bickering about
49. R: Yeah.
50. W: Who was buying his uniform () who was going to drop him off where he was going to stay.
51. R: [Right Ok]
52. W: So I ended up sending them out and then I brought him I said to mum and dad that erm () I would just basically do the talking [I knew that]
53. R: [mm]
54. W: I didn't really want them to [carry on disagreeing with each other]
55. R: [mmm]
56. W: When we brought him back in then (..) we then had a really positive meeting.
57. R: Oh ok
58. W: I mean you could see (..) from (1) just (..) having that meeting (..) and him (..) getting familiar with my face.
59. R: Yeah.
60. W: And obviously I have to tell them what the expectations are (..)
61. R: Yeah.
62. W: When I was talking through what the expectations are
63. R: [mm]
64. W: what the school's like (..)
65. R: [mm]
66. W: what we expect in terms of behaviour (..) he he he was so keen [about that]
67. R: [Ok]
68. W: He was he was pleased and he was smiling and you could see he's looking at his [mum]
69. R: [yeah]
70. W: And dad and maybe (..) was craving a little bit.
71. R: Yeah (..) that sort of structure.
72. W: Yeah. (..) and then er (2) and then erm (..) he then started with us a couple of days later.
73. R: Ok
74. W: Erm (1) we buddled him up with erm (..) with another child for a couple of days.
75. R: Yeah.
76. W: and instantly (..) he he socialised (..) made friends.
77. R: [mm hmmm]
78. W: (..) erm we we said that it was probably best not for him to mention the erm (..) his the issue at Xold school [that's why he'd left.]
79. R: [Mm (..) mm hmmm]
80. W: Erm and we always do suggest that because we do truly believe that (..) children should have a fresh start.
81. R: Yeah.
82. W: And it was a fresh a total fresh start for him. (..) So we'd said that he'd erm (..) I think he said that his his mum or dad had moved or something [like that].
83. R: [Right (..) yeah]
84. W: And that's why he was coming into the year late (..) and then he just he just settled in.

PARENT/RESIDENCE

HIGH EXPRESSION.

ONE SIZE FITS ALL?

ASSUMPTIONS - PUPIL VOICE

HIGH EXPECTATIONS

HIGH BUT REALISTIC EXPECTATIONS.

Do we know how much more about his situation show the importance of listening to all inclneled?

REFLECTION I NOW KNOW DO MUCH MORE ABOUT HIS SITATION SHOW THE IMPORTANCE OF LISTENING TO ALL INVOLVED.

BUDGET SYMPOSIUM

MADE SOUND WANTS BEST FOR HIM EMPATHY.

DON'T MENTION THE ISSUE WAS IT A JOURNAL DECISION?

FRESH START IMPORTANT.

EMPATHY HOPEFUL.

I KNOW THAT HIS MUM WASHN'T HAPPY ABOUT THAT.

SHE USES "WE'VE MORE THAN I" SHOWS PROFESSIONALISM.
85. R: Ok
86. W: to to year seven.
87. R: (1) mm hmm.
88. W: He's had erm support from his his
learning manager Mrs Wood and I think that
that was
89. R: Yeah
90. W: a real important [1] relationship [for
him]
91. R: [mm hmm]
92. W: erm I mean I should have
introduced you to Mrs Wood sorry but if I
ever do you'll see she's very [mums]
93. R: Ok.
94. W: In the way that she [cares for children]
95. R: [Yeah ( ) right]
96. W: so she'll go ( ) or have you got
you're pens and your pencils
97. R: Yeah
98. W: And if they go on she'll c c come on I'll
run and [get you some]
99. R: [(laughs)]
100. W: come on and she's got that really
and he just [emphasises]

101. R: OK
102. W: he really did
103. R: mm mm
104. W: ( ) erm she ki kinda takes kids
under her wing especially ( ) kids that are
coming ( )
105. R: mm
106. W: you know from troubled
backgrounds or ( ) if they've got other issues
107. R: Yes
108. W: and he just he absolutely
[emphasises]
109. R: mm mm
110. W: And ( ) one of the things that I
said ( ) for her to do because ( ) he was
engaging so well with us ( ) I said for her ( )
said you must get him involved in what we
now call student voice stuff and try and get
him to ( ) erm ( ) be helping out
111. R: Mm
112. W: ( ) erm and he does he has
done [and]
113. R: [OK]
114. W: he's done an awful lot of that as
well.
115. R: Right.
116. W: So
117. R: What does that involve?
118. W: (1) It's erm (...) well student voice is where they erm they they go off in groups and they erm discuss issues in the school like (...) I'm not sure which one (...) I'm not sure which group he's in (...) but they they look at different areas of the school that they want to improve and [it's basically their voice they then get to voice their opinion to SLT and]
119. R: [Ooh right ok yeah yeah yeah (.) right.]
120. W: (.) erm (...) and they can nominate themselves to be (...) school president (...) [it's things like that.]
121. R: [Oh right.]
122. W: The other side of it is like hosp hospitality like [so]
123. R: [Ah ok]
124. W: at parents evenings
125. R: Yeah
126. W: th they help out [and show parents where they need to go]
127. R: [right ok]
128. W: or [they make staff drinks]
129. R: [yeah yeah]
130. W: and things like that (.) and he (.) absolutely loves that.
131. R: [laughs]
132. W: Just just loves it. (.) and he gets a lot of praise for it the the praise is a massive thing.
133. W: (1) Praising these children [who have been through]
134. R: [yeah]
135. W: such a trauma of having to move schools [usually]
136. R: [yeah]
137. W: because of a serious incident
138. R: Yeah
139. W: Which has probably caused a lot of stress (.) in the family (.) to them:
140. R: Min
141. W: Coming and then all of a sudden somebody's telling me I'm doing that well:
142. R: Course yeah,
143. W: (.) erm (.) he really responds to that.
144. R: Yeah,
145. W: (.) We've had (.) we've had (.) one or two hiccups
146. R: Min
147. R: Min

Recognition of the trauma caused

Student Voice

Belonging

Communiiy

Proud

How good these provisions are

He absolutely loves helping out

Assumptions -> speaking for Owen?

Stressful

Trauma of moving schools

RECOGNITION

Able to reflect through this approach

He's doing well, give him a positive narrative, an alternative fresh start is needed

Hiccups: Good in terms of a positive narrative
148. W: Erm (1) and it does tend to erm be around (.) falling out with friends (.)
149. R: Mmm hmm.
150. W: And I think this is what maybe possibly could have happened at Xold school why he got himself into that situation.
151. R: Yeah.
152. W: He erm (1) he's had a couple of fall outs where Mrs Wood has had to (.) to intervene [and]
153. R: [ok]
154. W: to support him with managing it cos he just doesn't cope with it [very well]
155. R: [OK]
156. W: (.) erm and then we've just had one (.) incident (.) down in PE (.) erm and it it was in (.) the changing rooms and (.) that is one of the times where we would say it's the probably one of the most unstructured times
157. R: [Yeah]
158. W: aside from like break and lunch time
159. R: [yeah]
160. W: (.) because (.) that's the time where they the although there's a male member of staff [that]
161. R: [yeah]
162. W: will kind of stick their head in the changing rooms [they]
163. R: [yeah]
164. W: tend to come out
165. R: yeah
166. W: to let them get changed (.) it's one of the only times where they probably wouldn't be supervised
167. R: Mmm hmm
168. W: Erm (1) and he (.) another boy had called him (.) a name
169. R: Ok
170. W: he called (.) and then they got into a fight.
171. R: Right.
172. W: (.) he was devastated afterwards
173. R: Right.
174. W: He thought he was going to lose his place here.
175. R: Right. Was that before the summer then or 
176. W: Yeah.
177. R: Mmm hmm.
272
208. W: Not at all. (. .) Didn’t know anybody at all.
209. R: Ok
210. W: No I mean the what we do is we (. .) any child that comes in (. .) erm later into the school year (. .) we buddy them up (. .) with somebody
211. R: [yeah right]
212. W: for a couple of days cos it just gets them (. .) familiar with the school and
213. R: [yeah]
214. W: (. .) and then we’ll give them their own timetable when they feel confident enough to (. .) go out and about.
215. R: [Yeah ok] (. .) How do you think he’s doing now in terms of friendships and things?
216. W: (. .) Yeah really well (. .)
217. R: [Mm hmm]
218. W: Really really well (. .) Again he he can socialised with all (. .) different age groups
219. R: Mm
220. W: because it the student voice stuff that he does or when he volunteers, it’s all all different year groups and you if (. .) often just see him (. .) talking to anybody
221. R: Yeah
222. W: (. .) erm (. .) he’s a really friendly (. .) little boy
223. R: [Mm hmm]
224. W: (. .) erm (. .) yeah.
225. R: [What do you think it is about er (. .) like what do you think he thinks about the (. .) role of swap and (. .) how he is now like what do you get like any sense of (. .) his sort of feelings about everything?
226. W: Erm (. .) when he was (. .) when I had (. .) cos when (. .) like I say you make those those initial meetings (. .)
227. R: Mm
228. W: really positive
229. R: [Yeah]
230. W: to say that they can have a fresh start.
231. R: [Yeah]
232. W: When I talked through the incident what had happened, he cried. (. .) He sat there and he cried. (. .) And he he (. .) he clearly (. .) regretted it
233. R: [Yeah]
234. W: Erm (. .) I mean erm although he’s
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>235.</td>
<td>Loved his time here.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>236.</td>
<td>W: I think he liked it at Xold school as well. Erm, so he didn’t like me having to mean you have to cos you have to address it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>237.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>238.</td>
<td>W: That can’t happen again, so they’ve got a clear message. But for him, me talking about it a new person saying, you know from what Xold teacher told me.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239.</td>
<td>R: Right.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>240.</td>
<td>W: It wasn’t a very pleasant incident, and he was, you could see he was mortified by that.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>242.</td>
<td>W: And then I, and then I, and the minute the meeting switched to, right, leave that now.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>244.</td>
<td>W: We have to, let’s look at a fresh start.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>245.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>246.</td>
<td>W: He changed. He sat up in his chair.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>247.</td>
<td>R: OK.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>248.</td>
<td>W: He, he, he, I, and I kind of haven’t mentioned it since, because on only what I had to leave his other school for.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>249.</td>
<td>R: Mm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>250.</td>
<td>W: When I did his reintroduction meeting, just to say, you know. Obviously what was what he had to leave his other school for.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>251.</td>
<td>R: Hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>252.</td>
<td>W: So, erm, it can’t happen again.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>253.</td>
<td>R: Hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>254.</td>
<td>W: Cos it will be.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>255.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>256.</td>
<td>W: Erm, but, but, other than that.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>257.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>258.</td>
<td>W: Mrs Wood hasn’t mentioned it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>259.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>260.</td>
<td>W: It’s just you’re fresh start.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>261.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>262.</td>
<td>W: Which I think is helpful for him.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
252. R: Yeah. (2) What do you think it is about this sort of (.) I mean it sounds like it was a pretty awful (.) at (.) Xold school.
(1) What y’you’re like what what do you think’s behind that (.) sort of (.) for him?
253. W: (2) Erm (4) I think it’s I think he’s got some (.) social emotional issues.
254. R: mm
255. W: I think (1) I think he he seeks to be liked.
256. R: Right
257. W: er quite a lot.
258. R: Ok
259. W: And I think if (.) I think maybe (.) if he’s (.) if he felt (1) like he’s left been left out or something [I mean]
260. R: [yeah]
261. W: I don’t know the full incident (.)
262. R: yeah
263. W: the the details of the incident but (.) erm (1) I think it’s (.) probably then (.) got to the point where (.) his (.) got (.) got the best of him.
264. R: mm
265. W: (1) he certainly doesn’t seem like he would have maliciously gone out of his [way]
266. R: [No]
267. W: to plan (.) an attack [like that.]
268. R: [yeah yeah yeah]
269. W: It’s happened in the moment and I’m not sure why at that point cos the other boy was on the floor [already.]
270. R: [right]
271. W: Why you’d then take it [to that extreme].
272. R: [ok]
273. W: (1) I couldn’t
274. R: Yeah
275. W: I couldn’t say
276. R: Ok (1) So in terms of so he’s been here since January.
277. W: Yeah
278. R: (.) And has it been sort of (1) erm (1) like pos I know you said he’s had a couple of incidents (1) but generally like how would you kind of describe the time he’s had?
279. W: (1) From the minute he walked through the door he just really likes to be liked.
291. W: And he really wanted to do well here.
292. R: Mm
293. W: Erm and he was really grateful when I said he could it was a fresh start. 
WHY SHOULD HE HAVE A FRESH START, WHY SHOULD HE BE MADE TO FEEL SO BAD?
294. R: Ok.
295. W: and erm (.) we didn't necessarily have to tell staff.
296. R: Yeah.
297. W: that that incident had happened (.) And he walked through the door with a bag full of stuff and he was only he was only a tiny he's still only (tiny now).
298. R: ([laughs]) yeah.
299. W: Erm (1) but the minute he walked through the door he was so he was overly polite with staff.
300. R: [Ah]
301. W: So he hi miss hi miss (.) erm or we'd open a door for him oh thank you thank you thank you he was a and he just wanted to be liked.
302. R: Yeah.
303. W: And erm (.) and you'd I I just see him I do (.) a break duty and I just walk (.) walk round and I check that staff are on their duties and (.) so usually I'm looking at a clip board and walking round
304. R: Yeah.
305. W: and all of a sudden in my eyesight he'd just appear
306. R: ([laughs])
307. W: and it's just that I think just just (.) wanting a bit of attention
308. R: Yes
309. W: wanting to be liked I don't I don't see him as much now cos I think he gets that from his (friends)
310. R: Yeah ok.
311. W: But erm (1) yeah. (1) Just wanted to be liked all the time.
312. R: Uh hu (1) and I know you were er (.) saying before about like some of the things that you think work in school and I ([laughs]) I don't want you to repeat it too much it's just so I've got it on the (.) recording as well. Like in terms of erm (2) I suppose in terms of Xnew school really for the (.) you know like for children who go
through SWAP what what do you think kinda works obviously particularly for Owen what what are some of the sort of systems and things?

313. W: The thing that worked for him the most was I think the relationship he had with Mrs Wood to start off with.

314. R: mm hmm

315. W: Erm and that just the pastoral care that went into him to support him. Cos he's not really been hard work

316. R: Yeah.

317. W: I mean we've had a lot of kids come through that process

318. R: [yeah]

319. W: or SWAP process where we've we've had to put a lot of pastoral support in in mmm things he needs to

320. R: Yeah

321. W: place. But again I mean it's only going through I know obviously we've just been on a walk around there but when you see how consistently the school does everything all the time

322. R: Mm hmm

323. W: I mean that's not a show for you that just happens

324. R: [Yeah yeah yeah]

325. W: all the time. I Think (1) I I think (1) the likes of Owen and then other kids that we've had to go through that system (1) just respond to it straight away.

326. R: Mm hmm

327. W: They know they're so black and white.

328. R: Mm hmm

329. R: the minute they come in for the parent meeting like when I met with Owen's parents (1) I say to them this is how it is [and]

330. R: [Yeah]

331. W: it'll not change

332. R: Yeah

333. W: it'll always be like that. So erm and it's and it's still is like that for him now so (1) I think it (1) I like the way that we consistently

334. R: Mm

335. W: Erm manage behaviour.

336. R: Yeah

337. W: How we consistently have those
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line Numbers</th>
<th>Transcript</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>338.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>339.</td>
<td>W: (1) and the support's always there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>340.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>341.</td>
<td>W: (1) Some children when they when they start (.) with us (1) and they've been (1) maybe at schools that are not as as organised or don't have that the same approach that we do (.) erm (2) you'd well you'd think that they'd find it hard but (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>342.</td>
<td>R: Mm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>343.</td>
<td>W: they don't they just seem to adapt to it.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>344.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>345.</td>
<td>W: But with a lot of support that that goes on in the background.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>346.</td>
<td>R: Yeah.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>347.</td>
<td>W: What we say to them is we have such high expectations in terms of your learning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>348.</td>
<td>R: Mm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>349.</td>
<td>W: and the outcomes that you (.) you know that you can get (.) But also what sits alongside that is then an awful lot of support (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>350.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>351.</td>
<td>W: (1) So (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>352.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm (1) it works.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>353.</td>
<td>W: Mm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>354.</td>
<td>R: (1) Erm (1) so when he (.) I'm I'm just wondering as well about your kind of involvement with the like the SWAP process and how like what it looks like from your point of view. (.) So erm (.) so it was before Christmas that that that Xold school decided (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>355.</td>
<td>W: So (2) that it was the the with that there's two different systems.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>356.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>357.</td>
<td>W: There's Fair Access [which]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>358.</td>
<td>R: [Yeah]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>359.</td>
<td>W: Owen came through (.) which is (.) where (.) they're at the on the brink of a permanent exclusion. (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>360.</td>
<td>R: Yeah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>361.</td>
<td>W: And and and as a group of head teachers or senior leaders in a school (.) they get together (.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>362.</td>
<td>R: Mm hmm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>363.</td>
<td>W: Erm (.) I think it's usually held at Xspecial school.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
W: And then erm (.) they look at each individual case and rather than a child have a permanent exclusion on their record (.)

R: mm

W: they make a decision if it’s better for them to have a fresh start (.)

R: Yeah

W: In another mainstream school or in the PRU.

R: Yeah.

W: Obviously Owen because he (.)

R: Mm hmm

W: It was a one off incident (.) that’s the best system for him (.)

R: Yes

W: because he hasn’t got a permanent exclusion on his record (.) and he can he can have a chance at having a fresh start (.)

R: Yeah.

W: (.) Erm the the SWAP system as a whole has just hasn’t totally failed (.) now (.)

R: mm

W: So so it’s stopped happening.

W: We used to have

R: [Ok]

W: SWAP meetings now (.) what I’ve been familiar with in other authorities [and]

R: [mm hmm]

W: what happens in other authorities is what we call a managed move

R: Uh huh.

W: (.) now (.) the the system that I saw here (.) the way that erm (.) SWAP was done in in another (.)

R: Yeah

W: was the worst I’d seen

R: Really.

W: Yeah. (.) It it really was because (.) to start off with nobody was monitoring it.

R: Ok

W: (.) High schools were were shifting kids between (.)

R: Yeah

W: different schools (.) erm (.) sometimes I don’t know if they were being marked right on the register

R: Yeah
W: Erm (...) then (...) erm (...) they'd just fail and then go back to their other school. [Nobody]

R: [Right]

W: was really monitoring it

R: Yeah ok.

W: or (...) some schools would take more in (...) than others (...)

R: Yeah

W: some some wouldn't take any at all. (...) And (1) it was so (...) very disorganised you what it was (...) it was being used as a (...) to say that it was an intervention before you permanently excluded [a child]

R: [OK]

W: or

R: yeah

W: before you put them through to Fair Access so

R: yeah

W: it was like eh we've done that

R: Yeah

W: we've sent them to another school. (...) So it it was nobody was really monitoring it or supporting those children

R: Yeah

W: or those families who were going through [SWAP.]

R: [Mm hmm.]

W: The the most effective I've seen it work is in Xcity

R: [OK.]

W: [In (... over in Xlocal authority.

R: [1] and they call it a managed move?

W: They call it a managed move (...) and what they have is they have a lady (...) who (...) erm is er ve very experienced she she worked for behaviour support (...) erm and most other authorities have behaviour support [and]

R: [yeah]

W: This local authority doesn't.

R: Yeah.

W: I think they do for primary school children [but not for children at high school.]

R: [ok (... mm hmmm]

W: (1) So (...) she (...) erm is in contact with all the head teachers

R: mm

W: (...) and she co-ordinates managed
[moves.]

426. R: [mm]

427. W: (.) And so (.) every single child on
a managed move she has to know [about it]

428. R: [Ok (.) yeah]

429. W: and then what happens is she
goes to the initial [meetings]

430. R: [mm hmm]

431. W: with parents (.) and then she
makes the decision whether the managed
move has failed or not.

432. R: Ah I see right.

433. W: (.) So it's a person that works for
the local authority which is (.) difficult now
because you've got so many [schools]

434. R: [Yes]

435. W: that are academies and

436. R: Yeah

437. W: they don't buy into (.) that. (.) So
(erm) that's the most effective I've seen it
because the thing was (.) when she came to
meetings (.) you literally had to evidence
what interventions [you're putting in place]

438. R: [Right]

439. W: to try and make it work

440. R: Yeah Ok.

441. W: (.) Erm where as the system here
wasn't like that as I say it was just a [let's]
say]

442. R: [yeah]

443. W: that we've done a SWAP and

444. R: yeah

445. W: we're not bothered if it works or
not.

446. R: Yeah.

447. W: (.) Then there there was a SWAP
panel introduced do you know about that
one?

448. R: Mm hmm yeah, (.) Vaguely erm (.)
but it it seems to be very (.) blurred cos i'd
asked to ([laughs])

449. this is interesting what you're talking
about because I had asked to if I could sit on
that SWAP panel but I don't know if that's
just (.) [not happening any more?]

450. W: [Not happening. No (.) not
happening.] (.) So erm all the schools in
Xthis local authority decided to say we want
to take part in this SWAP process (.) we're
gonna meet as senior leaders (.) and then
we're gonna decide (.) erm (.) if erm (1)
we'll take eachother's
R: mm

W: ([) kids. And ([) the first few that I
went to cos I went to them ([it wasn't])

R: [Yeah]

W: It didn't have to be a head
teacher

R: Ok

W: So I went to them ([) erm and
what happened from there they were being
tracked as well so kids ([) you'd be tracking
kids)

R: [Ok ([) yeah yeah yeah]

W: where they were constantly. ([)
And then erm ([) the erm ([) the they were
monitoring how many you'd taken in ([and
out and how many you'd retained and stuff
like that)]

R: [Yeah ([) yeah ([) ok]

W: Which was really good)

R: Uh huh

W: cos ([at least somebody])

R: [yeah yeah yeah]

W: was ([) was monitoring it. ([) Erm
and the first few meetings went really well
and to be honest ([) we as a team of kind of
senior leaders that are in charge of
behaviour ([at our own])

R: [mm hmm]

W: Schools ([) I think our ([)
discussions ([laughs])) were ([) were a lot
more ([) I think they were ([) I think ([) that
([) they were ([) we considered the child's
need maybe more than what they do ([) at
Fair Access]

R: Right.

W: Because ([) I think the heads
discuss them there and sometimes ([) the
head's don't always ([) know ([)

R: Yeah.

W: the children.

R: Yeah.

W: You know I'm sure a lot do (but
and certainly head teacher does our
Principal but)

R: [Yeah ([) yeah ([) yeah ([) yeah ([)
yeah]

W: erm ([) they don't always know
the ins and outs of the [family life]

R: [mm hmm]

W: and what's ([) in the child's best
interests so ([) it was really it was it was
successful to start off with unfortunately a
couple of schools their principals decided that they weren't [taking part in that process]
477. R: [right]
478. W: (1) and then other schools then said (.) erm (.) we said we'd take part. Xold school did t. (.) I think Xschool did. But
479. R: Yeah
480. W: we're too far away [from eachother]
481. R: [yeah]
482. W: and the problem is if you are going to put a child on a SWAP
483. R: Yeah
484. W: it's (.) you can't it can't set them up to fail (.) from the minute that they
485. R: [yeah course]
486. W: you know knowing that they can't get on the bus [there or]
487. R: [yeah yeah yeah yeah
488. W: it's gonna cause their family stress getting them there cos then it's (.) it doesn't serve [it's purpose]
489. R: [yeah (.) yeah]
490. W: So (.) er yeah so as it currently stands (.) the the way that it's supposed to work is that you come up with a private arrangement so I'd phone [the vice principal at Xschool and say]
491. R: [Aah (.) ok (.) yeah yeah]
492. W: (1) would you
493. R: right
494. W: would you mind taking (.) on a student
495. R: Yes
496. W: on a on a swap (.) and then they might say yeah oh we've got somebody in year 9 [could you]
497. R: [yeah]
498. W: take someone.
499. R: Right ok. (.) So (.) the way Owen's done it then (.) he's come through (.) FAP. (1) What how what how would you sort of describe what what has happened cos when he came here it wasn't like oh we'll see how it goes (.) was it [or]
500. W: No. (.) They come on role.
501. R: Yeah
502. W: They come on your school role.
503. R: Yeah.
504. W: They come off the role of the school that they were at and they come on
[Transcribed text]

Moving to Problem

Children bring issues to school, we need to look at what's behind it. They deserve it: empathy.

Owen is a "success story." Advocate assumptions?

Proud hopeful but assuming, pupils/parent values missing. Clarifying.

He came through Fair Access instead as a P7: "I'm being honest now." Purpose of SWAP?

Benefits of SWAP. SWAP makes them value their place here. More Power/Authority.

Strict rules here. High expectations.
530. W: He went to Xschool on a SWAP for 6 weeks
531. R: Yeah
532. W: and he did the full 6 weeks
533. R: Yeah
534. W: (1) and he came back and the meeting he was like a different child [in the meeting]
535. R: [Really]
536. W: afterwards because (.) he he wanted to come back [so and then]
537. R: [OK]
538. W: you can say to someone well you've seen what it's like [and that's]
539. R: [yeah yeah]
540. W: that's supposed to be what makes part of what makes a swap successful
541. R: Yeah course.
542. W: Cos the aim isn't always (.) for them to go on role at the other school
543. R: Yeah
544. W: for them to stay there
545. R: Yeah (.) yeah
546. W: I mean if that if if the SWAP placement is successful and (.) and and that's what needs [to happen]
547. R: [mm hmm]
548. W: then great.
549. R: mm hhm
550. W: And we've had students go out to other schools (.) and it has been successful and they've gone on their role. (1) And then we've had it that on the flip side of it where they've then wanted to (.) to come back.
551. R: [m m hhm.]
552. W: (1) What you do often see with children that go on those SWAP placements or that are on the SWAP placements
553. R: mm
554. W: is (1) they maintain (.) their behaviour for the six weeks. [TRAINING AROUND MEETING THE UNMET NEEDS NOT JUST DISCIPLINE]
555. R: mm hhm
556. W: And (.) you can I think you can extend them (.) erm (.) but not it shouldn't really be for much
557. R: yeah
558. W: longer than that. (.) Erm (2) but (.) erm (1) the (1) you often find that their
either back to (.) behaving (.) how they were [at their previous school] [WHY THOUGH]

R: [Yeah yeah yeah. (.) Right (.) Mm...]

W: Not some we've had some real success stories here. (.) Real success stories (.) But I know that we've we've sent children out on SWAPS

R: Mm

W: and they've been successful for the 6 weeks (.) and then I've met like the vice principal like maybe two or three months after that and they've gone (.) Oh my god ((laughs))

R: Yeah yeah yeah

W: (1) You know (.)

R: [Things have changed]

W: [Can't believe they behaved that six weeks as soon as they were on roll [and they started misbehaving so.]

R: [Yes (.)] yeah yeah yeah. (1) Erm (1) do you ha (.) what's or (1) what's been you involvement then cos O-O-Owen lives with his dad for a week does he and his mum for a week and

W: Yeah.

R: (.) what's been your sort of involvement with them since he's erm (.) been here?

W: Erm (2) not really much involvement (.) erm I know (.) erm there was quite a bit of upset when I think cos mum was down as contact one

R: Mm

W: (.) erm mum was getting text messages about if there was anything to do with his behaviour. [We send text messages for positive praise as well.]

R: [OK. (.) Yeah yeah. (.) yeah.]

W: Erm and then letters were going (.) to mum as well and dad range up and was really (1) quite upset and [angry]

R: [OK]

W: about that and wanted a copy of his (.) things like his school report [and stuff like that.]

R: [OK yeah.]

W: (.) So (.) erm (.) we just (.) sorted that (.)

R: Mm

W: Erm (1) Mrs Wood makes sure that if there's anything at all with Owen (.)
she just keeps them both in the loop.

581. R: Yeah.
582. W: So if () like if she needs to phone them even if it’s positive stuff she’ll phone
583. R: Yeah.
584. W: (1) mum and dad
585. R: Yeah (1) mm hmm.
586. W: But other than that we’ve not really had to have much (1) much contact with them cos his placement here’s been (so successful).)
587. R: [Yeah () ok] () mm hmm. (1) Erm and he’s year eight now isn’t he.
588. W: () Yeah.
589. R: Yeah. (1) Erm what would you say your () your er like hopes are for him kind of as he (1) moves through school?
590. W: (1) Erm just to carry on the way that he’s going [I mean]
591. R: [Mm]
592. W: I mean he’s just doing so well and () he does crave to be liked but not not it’s not too much it’s (1) () it’s quite nice you know and he walks past you and he’s hi miss [like]
593. R: [Yeah.]
594. W: wants your attention it’s quite sweet [1] Erm () I just hope that there’s not another () serious incident [cos]
595. R: [Mm mm]
596. W: () his behaviour his behaviour will stay OK now he’s fine.
597. R: [Yeah.]
598. W: () Erm and he knows what our expectations are
599. R: [Yeah]
600. W: and he will () he will () hopefully just continue with that [and]
601. R: [Mm]
602. W: and then continue his the rest of his [school life here with us.]
603. R: [Mm (1) mm hmm]
604. W: (1) I’m just hoping () and I don’t really know if there’s like an intervention that we can put in place [to prevent that]
605. R: [Mm () mm]
606. W: () because () erm he’s had you know he’s had an awful lot of () support from from Mrs Wood [MUM DOESN’T THINK SO]
607. R: mm hmm
608. W: () and () erm () from me ().
609. R: mm hmm
610. W: erm (1) I mean we do have things like er that targeted youth service who do (. ) things like anger management [and stuff like that.]
611. R: [Yeah (. ) yeah]
612. W: But he doesn’t (. ) come across [angry.]
613. R: [No ((laughs))] When I met him like you can’t really imagine it.
614. W: No (. ) So (. ) erm (1) yeah and I can’t imagine now (1) the incident. (. ) I can’t im- I can’t imagine]
615. R: [Yeah]
616. W: It I can’t imagine him taking something to that extreme.
617. R: Doing it. (. ) [Yeah.]
618. W: [And!] (. ) hopefully it it will just mean that there’s not another serious that that (. ) everything that’s happened he clearly found the whole thing [traumatic.]
619. R: [mm]
620. W: He really did. (. ) Like I say to you that time when we were sat in the meeting and he and I had to talk about it
621. R: Mm
622. W: he was so upset. (. ) He was so upset and he wanted he was trying to justify to [me everything that this boy]
623. R: [Ok.]
624. W: had done to him [that made him]
625. R: [yeah yeah yeah]
626. W: (. ) lose his temper. (. ) Erm (1) I know sometimes you like to hope that part of the (1) the swap system and the FAP system is that it it’s a [lesson learned] and then
627. R: [Yeah]
628. W: again you do have your fresh start.
629. R: mm
630. W: And for him he really has had a fresh start as well]
631. R: [Yeah yeah]
632. W: so I’m hoping (1) that (.) [we just]
633. R: [It’ll] continue.
634. W: Yeah. (. ) And that actually the outcome is that he learned from the incident [there .] WHAT HAS HE LEARNED? HE HAS ISSUES AND NO ONE IS HELPING?]
635. R: [Yes (1) Erm (. ) so in terms of er (. ) it it’s Mrs Wood who you said is a sort of doesn’t want him to go through it again
W: Yeah (1) I think he used to spend quite a lot of time with her on a break [and a lunch duties.]
R: [Right ok]
W: So she'd just like be talking to him. (2) Erm (3) and then she's she saw an awful lot of him when he was doing like the student voice stuff
R: Yeah
W: because she was co-ordinating some of that. (4) Erm (5) but he he just loved to impress him so she'd he'd be training behind her she'd be marching [off] (Win) DOES HE WANT TO IMPRESS> NOT A GOOD THING TO FEEL LIKE HE HAS TO PROVE HIMSELF)
R: [laughs]
W: doing something and then she'd turn round and say oh I've got little Owen here (6)
R: [laughs]
W: Erm (7) look how well he's doing Miss Williams and he'd be leaning [with pride stood behind her]
R: [Aww [laughs]]
W: and then she'd carry on like just storming off and he's [behind you can see him like he's just (8)]
R: [laughs]
W: Yeah but again it's that (9) that relationship that she formed
R: Yeah
W: with him
R: Yeah (10) yeah
W: I think and his parents as well [because]
R: [OK]
W: his parents (11) I think his parents (1) like (12) Mrs Wood.
R: Right.
W: (1) Yeah she's very down to Earth and she's very Xlocal authority.
R: Right ok.
W: So I think a lot of people can relate to that
R: [can relate (13) yeah] ok. (1) is he quite able would you say like with his (1)
W: (1) Er I I can (go and I think he
came into the top sets. (.)
661. R: Right.
662. W: He did he came into the top sets
   [so he’s very able.]
663. R: [Ok]
664. W: Yeah.
665. R: Mmm hmm.
666. W: (1) Yeah very able.
667. R: Mmm hmm
668. W: (1) And he’s not flagged up as a
   concern in any of his lessons so he must [be
   making expected progress.]
669. R: [Right (1) ok.] (1) Well that’s good.
   (1) Erm (2) with er (1) the sort of (.)
   when he came on the swap then was it that he
   finished at Xold school before Christmas
   and did he start straight after Christmas
   here?
670. W: (1) He did. (.) He did (.) yea. (1)
   Yeah I think he he had the Christmas break
   in between.
671. R: Ok.
672. W: Very keen to get back into school
   [though.]
673. R: [Yeah]
674. W: His parents were very keen [to
   get him back into school]
675. R: [Right (1) right]
676. W: which is helpful because
   sometimes a lot of those children that have
   come particularly through FAP (.)
677. R: Yeah
678. W: their parents don’t really engage
   [very well]
679. R: [Yes]
680. W: Erm (.) or are not pushing the kids
   to [be back in school]
681. R: [Yeah]
682. W: (1) So (.) that that is probably
   part of his success story [the fact that]
683. R: [Yeah]
684. W: his (.) although his parents
   argued with eachother
685. R: Uh huh
686. W: the outcome that they wanted
   was that they wanted him to come on roll
   here [and for him]
687. R: [Yeah yeah]
688. W: to stay and for him to do well.
689. R: Ok. (1) Erm (.) and when do
   you first find out that that he’s (.) coming in
   it cos you’ve been on the panel as well
690. W: [I haven't] been on Fair Access Panel

691. R: Mm hmm

692. W: at the time it was out vice principal. (.) Ermm but it's usually the principal or vice principals. (.) erm and then (.) and this (.) this is what tends to happen at at most schools they'll then have somebody like me an assistant principal or a (.) a director of behaviour or an inclusion manager

693. R: Mm

694. W: that they'll then say (.) right we've been directed to take this child.

695. R: Mm

696. W: SWAP's your own choice as a school

697. R: Yeah ok

698. W: whereas FAP you're you're directed to take

699. R: OK

700. W: them. (.) Ermm and then (.) it's then (.) their job like it was mine to then get parents in

701. R: Right

702. W: integrate them

703. R: Right. (.) OK

704. W: (.) Ermm and I don't know whether I mentioned it (.) I know I mentioned it while we were walking round but (.) we have what we call a pastoral/ support plan where we

705. R: [Mm hmm]

706. W: set them smart targets [to work towards so]

707. R: [Ah right. (.) OK]

708. W: erm (.) the minute any child comes in on a a (.) through Fair Access or on a SWAP

709. R: Mm hmm

710. W: is already we're already (.) monitoring them and [keeping]

711. R: [Mmm]

712. W: keeping track on whether they're meeting their targets

713. R: OK

714. W: It's things (.) when when they first come through it'll it will be things like (1) not picking up behaviour points in lessons

715. R: Yeah
716. W: So not ... not having to be EL’d in a [classroom]
717. R: [OK]
718. W: cos that’s causing disruption to learning. (?) And you can monitor that very easily cos
719. R: mm
720. W: (W) say if you we try we we try and do it like at two week intervals I think Owen we ended up doing it a bit longer cos he was
721. R: Yeah
722. W: He was meeting his targets all the time. (?) Erm but like (I) erm (1) you can just print off it they have (1) got behaviour points
723. R: [Mm hmm]
724. W: so you can see whether they’ve met [the target]
725. R: [Mm hmm]
726. W: or not.
727. R: Mm hmm
728. W: So
729. R: And he (%) did quite well with that as soon as he came [in or]
730. W: [He he was (.) Mrs Wood ran it all.
731. R: mm hmmm
732. W: So I couldn’t say (%) like erm (?) that what his targets were or anything
733. R: Yeah yeah yeah
734. W: for definite. (%) Erm (?) but yeah he was successful on it yeah.
735. R: [OK. (1)] So in terms of it’s er (?) as the sort of the school who take who’s taken Owen (?) what’s do you know what’s I dunno whether it would be you or somebody else in terms of like a (?) like a (?) is it a phone conversation you’d have with the with the previous school or like what what’s that [sort of]
736. W: [What] happens is (?) erm therers a (?) website called Xwebsite and I say for instance if we were referring a child [into]
737. R: [Mm hmmm]
738. W: Fair Access (?) you have to make sure that (?) like (?) in fact I could give you a copy of his referral [form (.)]
739. R: [Ah right.]
740. W: I could give you (.) [what came through from from Xold school]
741. R: [Mm hmmm (.) yeah that’d be helpful yeah.}
| 742. | W: But you'd have to (.) we'll have to (2) we'd have to try [and hurry up.] |
| 743. | R: I might even be able to access the Xwebsite (1) erm |
| 744. | W: Do you do you speak to Xstaff member at Xspecial school |
| 745. | R: [Yeah at Xspecial school] |
| 746. | W: Yeah [so if you speak to Xstaff member she'll be able to print you (.) his off.] |
| 747. | R: [Yeah (.) I can (.) have a look (.) yeah (.) I'll be able to do that.] |
| 748. | W: They they it just lists all the historic ones [so (.) erm] |
| 749. | R: [Yeah right ok] |
| 750. | W: you could actually put cos that'd be useful for you cos you could [see what Xold school wrote about him before he came:] |
| 751. | R: [Yes (1) oh (1) I see.] |
| 752. | W: [1] His (.) referral form will be fairly short [because] |
| 753. | R: [yeah] |
| 754. | W: it was a one off incident |
| 755. | R: yeah |
| 756. | W: and he was so early into [year seven.] |
| 757. | R: [Yeah] |
| 758. | W: (.) What they do tend to ask for is (.) they want to know every intervention that you've done. |
| 759. | R: Yeah. |
| 760. | W: I mean I could I could show you one of mine [one of ours (.) I could delete the name] |
| 761. | R: [Right ok (1) yeah yeah] |
| 762. | W: and show you what a referral looks like (.) because if there's (.) erm (.) we we like especially for our kids here we put (.) a ton of intervention into them if they're not succeeding here so (.) but at Fair Access they'd be expecting that you'd at that point (.) you'd done everything. |
| 763. | R: Yeah I see. |
| 764. | W: I mean it's a bit of a frustration for the (.) I spoke to XEducational Psychologist last week [because] |
| 765. | R: Uh huh |
| 766. | W: it's a bit of a frustration like at the moment they won't even erm consider a child through Fair Access if they've not had an Ed Psych [assessment.] |

---

"Owen FAP Process"

**ADVOCATE.**
I want the best for him.

**Staff knowledge not necessarily about "an intervention"**
"We are inclusive."

"Quick fix?"
We put a ton of intervention now.

"Reframing powerlessness."
Need EP involvement before FAP.
294

767. R: [Right ok]. () And is that a new thing?
768. W: ([sighs]) Well I think they've it's always been good if you've had one now they're just insisting that you've had it. () I mean
769. R: [Mmm () right () Ok]
770. W: there's a child that XEducational Psychologist is going to have to see next week [who who]
771. R: [Right]
772. W: we want to put through Fair Access. () Erm () we put a case together and they're just knocked it back and said () he'd have to have [see and Ed Psych.]
773. R: [Right Ok.]
774. W: I mean he won't benefit anything () from it.
775. R: [Yes] yeah yeah yeah yeah.
776. W: () And it's () a bit of a pointless exercise.
777. R: Yeah Ok.
778. W: I mean we've had that full discussion with Jo but () Erm () (1)
779. R: It's what they're asking for.
780. W: Yeah.
781. R: (1) Are we all right for time?
782. W: Yeah I'm gonna have to go out on duty shortly.
783. R: Yeah. () Erm (1) just er quickly () Erm I was just gonna say () Erm (1) if (1) just kinda your thoughts generally really I suppose on the () or on the I mean you've said () bits already () about the panel. Erm (1) is is would there be anything that you would wanna change about it or like anything that you think erin (1) doesn't work well or
784. W: (1) Erm (3) it's a real tough one because you () I've kinda got the understanding that (1) that () there's so many children in XLocal authority that do get referred (1) to the FAP [and]
785. R: [mm]
786. W: and the PRU is full.
787. R: Mm hmmm.
788. W: It's full.
789. R: Mm hmmm.
790. W: Erm () so () I get like it's it's it's really hard. () Erm (3) and I don't to be honest I don't know what they could change here.
W: Erm (2) I know (.) that the provisions that I've seen in other authorities (.) behaviour support provision I mean I work at another school in Xcity and they have behaviour support.

R: Right.

W: And you buy it in cos they're they're an academy [now]

R: [Yes]

W: so they're part of our multi-academy trust (.) Erm they buy it in erm and it's (1) very highly skilled people

R: Mm hhm

W: who don't work for you at your school

R: Uh huh

W: who can (1) who can help with (.) family engagement [and stuff]?

R: [Yeah ok]

W: Erm (.) they can go and support the child in lessons

R: Mm hhm

W: Erm it seems to work really well (.) in other schools.

R: [Mm hhm ok yeah.] 

W: They just don't have that in this Xlocal authority.

R: Yeah.

W: Erm (.) there was also a provision (.) erm over in Xcity (.) that was for children that were really anxious and phobic [and it's]

R: [Ok]

W: it'd be interesting for you to see the school [it's called]

R: [Mm]

W: it's a school called Xschool.

R: Oh right.

W: Erm and (.) it's (1) children who just can't cope in a mainstream environment and I think that they do have something similar here

R: mm hhm

W: but I think you've gotta have an EHCP [you've gotta]

R: [Ah Ok]

W: it's gotta go through all that process first.

R: Yeah yeah.

W: Erm (.) where as in other authorities I've seen that there are...
provisions[that]
821. R: [yeah]
822. W: you can (1) you can refer into.
823. R: Ok.
824. W: Erm and they have their own separate panel [so]
825. R: [Mm hmm]
826. W: where as here (.) you’ve got xspecial school.
827. R: Yeah.
828. W: (1) Erm
829. R: (1) Yeah.
830. W: (1) So I’ve seen in other authorities they kind of had two provisions.
831. R: Yes.
832. W: One for children that are more anxious and [phobic]
833. R: [Yeah]
834. W: and erm (.) can’t/can’t deal with [being in]
835. R: [Yeah]
836. W: a mainstream environment (.) and then one for children who (.) there’s [behavioural issues].
837. R: [Like the FAP] type of thing.
838. W: Yeah.
839. R: Ok (.) yeah (1) Ok well that’s really good thanks for [all that information]
840. W: [I can meet you again] if you’ve anything else
841. R: Yeah
842. W: any questions you’ve got you know once you’ve been back and you’ve (.) listened to it just
843. R: [Yeah course that’s helpful to know no problem] R
844. W: [Just ring me (.) or email me]

845. Total end time: 38:01
Miss Williams interview 2 with analysis

PART 2

845. W: Yeah so (.) erm (.) one of the things (.) that I was just wanting to ask about a bit more detail (.) erm cos you talked about sort of (.) like (1) well especially with Owen and (3) children in general I suppose kinda going through (.) FAP (.) and you were talking about (1) like that kind of erm (.) importance of of making things positive
846. R: and making sure that (1) things are positive when (.) they come here (.) for for them and the families
847. W: Mmm
848. R: I suppose (.) Erm (.) and I was just wanna ask about (.) just unpick that a little bit more I suppose (.) erm (1) just in terms of (.) like your (.) kinda thinking around that I guess.
850. W: (2) Erm (1) in terms of like how we do it how do we do it?
851. R: Yeah or (.) almost sort of why you feel that (1) you (.) why you feel it is so important (.) I suppose as well that kind of (2) why it’s so important to be (.) positive I guess
852. W: (2) Well (1) being type of kids that have been through that that system (1) have clearly (.) had (.) a lot of negative (.) there’s (.) which (.) has been associated (.) serious incident
R: [Yeah]

W: [uh] which is (1) obviously negative.

R: Mm hmm.

W: And then there's (2) there's there's (1) they've repeatedly disrupted the school or (2)

R: Yeah

W: there's been issues with their behaviour so (2) so they've they've (1) clearly had a period of time where (1) something's gone wrong.

R: [uh] Ermm.

W: And (2) the whole point of (1) them starting at a new school is to give them (1) a fresh start.

W: [uh]...

W: (1) Erm (1) and (2) I think that (1) if (2) you can be as positive as as you can cos they may they may have have like if they've come through through that system because they've [underline]... erm (1) have repeated poor behaviour (1) their their previous school.

R: Mm.

W: all then they've they've had is just (1) they would have just had a lot of negatives.

R: Yeah.

W: Erm (1) and (2) brought on themselves (1) you know if it's (1) a result of poor behaviour (1) But then trying to give them a fresh start and be positive about it (1) so that's why I was saying to you we (1) although when (2) they come over to us we (1) erm (2) they come through that system. We don't (1) we don't share that with wider staff. (1) We do actually just give them a fresh start. (1) They'll meet me (1) and I'll go through (2) the reasons why they've gone through that system.

W: [uh]...

W: and be clear on what the expectations are but then aside from that (1) at the end of the meeting I'll always try to make it so it's it's (1) right we draw a line under that now (1) and then (1) right lets (1) lets have a look at what you your week would look like like your first week and (1) [underline]... erm (1) so what I'm gonna do is I'm gonna buddy you up with somebody and...

W: [uh] Ermm.

W: and and (1) you see you see it (1) just during (1) the like (1) the process of the meeting that when you (1) they don't like talking about what's happened. (1) They way it it's hard for them to be especially with somebody new as well.

R: Yeah

W: and the fact that it's at another school (1) and you're talking about negative

R: [uh]...

298
things that has happened in a school [or]
875. R: [Mm hnm]
876. W: a serious incident that's happened at
school. (1) But the minute that you you kind
of draw a line under that (.) and you've (.) like
flipped to the right (.)
877. R: [Mm hnm]
878. W: cos you're going to be starting with
us and this is what's gonna happen. You see a
change in (. .) even just their mannerisms and
how they sit (.) and then how they respond to
you you eye contact they'll give you and it's (1)
and then (2) it's like when when you look at (.)
Owen's case (3) because we were so (. .)
encouraging about him doing well here [and we]
879. R: [Mmm]
880. W: we said we said about (. .) him (.)
joining things like the student voice and (1) he
he loved it he just (.) he he loved it and it
doesn't always it doesn't always work (.)
sometimes
881. R: [Yeah]
882. W: erm (. .) we've we've had kids who
have who have come through that system and
it's (. .) y ou can be as positive as you like
883. R: [Mm]
884. W: the the behaviour won't (. .) won't
change (. .) Err sometimes a mainstream
 provision isn't right for that child but (2) to be
honest we have had a lot of successful cases (1)
through Fair Access:
885. R: Yeah
886. W: Or through a a a managed move from
another school er (2) so erry something's
working
887. R: [Mm hnm]
888. W: Erm and I think the the positivity is
(1) probably part of
889. R: Yeah
890. W: that.
891. R: [1] The student voice stuff as well (. .)
erm (1) what (. .) cos you said that (.) that Owen
sort of (1) seems to like that.
892. W: Mm (. .) he loves that yeah.
893. R: What do you think it is about that
that he (.) that he kind of (. .) seems to (. .) like so
much?
894. W: Cos he gets praise for it.
895. R: Right.
896. W: Yeah (. .) cos he gets praise for it. (. .)
Erm (. .) he he just (1) he loves (.) any kind of-
recognition. (. .) Erm (1) and (. .) especially like if
they do the hospitality stuff where they support
the parents evening and things. (. .) He's (. .)
just proud as punch walking round (cos)
897. R: [Right]
W: he gets a (.) a at well done.
R: Yeah.
W: Erm (.) we had a bit of a (.) blip
with him last week actually [just a]
R: [Oh right]
W: just a little one (.) erm (2) but this
goes (.) back to the (.) positive and negative
W: [Silence] "I'm sorry"
W: (1) kind of (.) element (.) of what
we’re talking about
W: Because (.) he’d been in a lesson
with a (.) a (1) a (.) a teacher in (.) I can’t
remember what they lesson was but (.) erm (2)
terrible style of teaching (.) erm it’s just (.) [hhmm (1)]
very black and white it’s very (.) you’re going I’m
going teach you’re going to [to to]
R: [Yeah]
W: to listen. (.) Erm and it and and (.) a
lot of our kids they love that and respond to
that. (.) There’s but there’s some (.) [that that]
don’t and I think that (.) Owen (.) he usually
responds to it. (.) One day he’d got a little bit
crazy and he’d then just (.) and it and it was
nothing serious
R: Yeah
W: it was literally (.) he had to have a bit
of a telling off. (1) Well (.) he was distraught (.)
He was absolutely distraught (.) It was it he
didn’t even get to the point where he got a
detention. (1) But he’d gone home and he’d he
was upset about it that mum had to bring
him back into school.
R: Ah
W: To to to just talk to somebody
[about what (.) how he could]
R: [Aahh right]
W: make it better.
R: Right.
W: And I (.) his (.) I think his thought
process probably would have been (.) I’ve let
people down. (.) Erm and (.) and this goes back
to if they’ve (.) if (1) you know he (.) he had (.)
that serious incident at (1) that school and I
think he just felt like he’d let ev (.) I think it
brings back those feelings [no]
R: [Yeah]
W: (1) So (.) I mean I did some
restorative work with him and the teacher and
that worked really well.
R: OK.
W: But I could tell afterwards he was he
wanted to know how I felt about it (.) about (.)
you know about or the fact that he’d held up
himself down I think he was I think he was more
cut to to me (.) Erm (1) and that’s because
part of that is because I said (.) we’re giving you
this [spesh-]
921. R: [Yeah]
922. W: It's it's I think there's they think it's that that comes from me personally
923. R: [laughs]
924. W: ([laughs]) it's not me personally but (.) erm (1) but yeah it's (.) because we've been so positive [he didn't]
925. R: [Yeah]
926. W: he didn't want any negative.
927. R: No
928. W: And (1) even just normal things (1) he'd just got told of [he'd]
929. R: [Yeah]
930. W: Literally just been in the classroom and was told not (.) to turn around twice. (.) And then was threatened with a detention but (.) didn't actually [get one and he.]
931. R: [Yeah (.)]
932. W: Just (.) he was (.) devastated by it.
933. R: Aah. (.) When he first started and things as well cos you were saying that he er (.) like was sort of (2) being overly polite and
934. W: [Yeah]
935. R: Like wanting to hold the door open
936. [and]
937. W: [Mmm]
938. R: All of that. (.) What do you think like (.) h he was sort of (1) thinking in those first sort of few days and weeks and things and (.) like what do you think was behind all of that?
939. W: [3] I (.) I can't when (.) if I think back to like the the incident (.) that happened at
940. R: [Mm]
941. W: his previous school (1) I can't think.
942. R: [Yeah]
943. W: (1) I mean he's done it. (1) But I can't think (2) why. And I think he he (.) (2) I think he he was trying to kinda make up for the for for what I (.) knew he'd done (.) erm (.) so I think it was just [that]
944. R: [Yeah]
945. W: Just (3) cos it was particularly with me and remember I was one of the only people that knew about (.) what had happened at his previous schoo.
946. R: Mmm
947. W: Erm (.) and XTeaching assistant (.) she (.) she knew as well (.) cos she was part of (.) erm (.) the the settling in process.
948. R: Yeah.
948. W: So she had to kinda know. (.) So (.) I think cos he knew that we both knew (.) it was like we got to make up for what I've done.
949. R: Mmm (.) [Yeah (.)] that makes

unrealistically positive??
eggshell
STMH: he needs to know someone is ok expectation too high
almost "I don't understand"
"I wasn't expecting it"
his resilience is affected
my prompts are guiding her
to unpick the needs for
to help herself
can't understand why
do it.
INCOMPREHENSION
LACK OF UNDERSTANDING
STMH needs?
this conversation giving her an opportunity to consider
his perspective.
he feels desperate to prove self.
sense.

950. W: Yeah. (.) Sad that isn’t it ((laughs))
951. R: Yeah (.) erm (.) but I mean it’s good
952. W: Yeah.
953. R: I mean he was telling me how much
954. W: Erm
955. R: the swap(.) the (.) going through
956. W: I (.) think (2) I don’t think they were
957. R: [Mmm]
958. W: I think (.) I think they had quite (.)
959. R: Right
960. W: And I think (.) erm (3) I think I (2) I
961. R: Mmm. Mmm
962. W: I think (.) because I was quite firm
963. R: Yeah
964. W: don’t do that. (.) I think it just laid (.)
965. R: Yeah (.) yeah
966. W: And and (.) and I think (1) be just
967. R: Mmm
968. W: with mum (.) so that she (.) she has
969. R: Mmm hmm
970. W: and she can get things clear in her
head
971. R: Yeah
972. W: I think erm (3) I think that (.) that
973. R: (1) Mm (1) So (.) erm (1) reassurances
974. W: Yeah.
975. R: Yeah
976. W: Yeah (.) because (.) erm (1) like when
I showed you around (.) when we say we’re
gonna do something we do it.

977. R: Yeah.
978. W: And we're consistent with everything we do.
979. R: [Yeah]
980. W: When I said to them in the meeting, erm every single child's gonna wear their uniform [perfect]
981. R: [Mm hm]
982. W: when you go in lessons if a teacher does this and it will happen in all your lessons you will fall silent and the everything we say here so in those meetings he will have gone in a class and gone oh actually
983. R: Yeah
984. W: it does happen. And it happens all the time.
985. R: Yeah.
986. W: And I think erm I think er (1) that's that's part of what's what's helpful [really]
987. R: [Yeah] (1) Do you think that erm how do you think they feel about things now? (2) His mum and dad?
988. W: (1) Erm (3) I think they're just happy that he's settled again.
989. R: Mm hm.
990. W: I'm erm (1) I like I say mum mum came in last week and (1) she does (.) although she is (.) she is quite an emotional person
991. R: [Yeah]
992. W: she was really keen to work with the school and (1) she wanted (1) to be OK and (.) yeah I think I think they're alright about the whole situation now.
993. R: Yeah.
994. W: I think it's just one of those now that we say we leave it behind him.
995. R: Yeah.
996. W: In the past.
997. R: And I suppose you probably don't have much sort of (.) over and beyond the normal (.) to do with (.) his mum and dad if he's not kinds (1) flagging us as
998. W: No. (3) Erm (1) we (.) to be honest I (1) when I saw mum (1) it was the first time I'd seen her since he'd started
999. R: Right.
1000. W: I think er X Teaching Assistant may have met with her a couple of times [but]
1001. R: [Right]
1002. W: That was certainly the first time I'd seen her so we'd not had to (.) like (1) put anything any interventions in place.
1003. R: Mm hmm
1004. W: we (1) they just seem to have (1)
coped with the move well and then he's settled
in really well (1)
1005. R: [Yeah] (1) Ok (2) Erm (2) yeah it's
interesting really I suppose Owen's (1) situation
(1) because (1) or (1) it seemed like it was just
like a one off at (1) at Xold school (1) that kinda
led to him (1) going through FAP.
1006. W: (3) Mm.
1007. R: Erm (3) what (1) I was just kinda
wondering (1) really your (1) sort of thoughts (1)
around (1) going (1) through (1) FAP (1) like rather
than having that permanent exclusion (1) what
you kind of think of it?
1008. W: (4) it's (1) difficult cos it's there's not
(1) really much difference. (1) The only thing (1)
that I think (1) is (1) a (1) a big difference is (1) if
a child knows that a permanent exclusion
exclusion has been [issued]
1009. R: [Mmm]
1010. W: or a parent does (1) they see that as
them being on their child's record.
1011. R: Right.
1012. W: Now (1) it (2) because (1) I think
constantlly through school (1) if you (1) if you
misbehave you're you're obviously threatened
with an exclusion so you (1) you know an
exclusion's a bad thing.
1013. R: Mm.
1014. W: And then (1) schools then (1) then (1)
obviously ultimately their ultimate sanction is a
permanent exclusion.
1015. R: [Yeah]
1016. W: And we talk about the impact that
has (1) on the child.
1017. R: Mm.
1018. W: Cos if a child's (1) at risk of being
permanently excluded or has been
1019. R: Mm.
1020. W: the conversations that have been
had about what (1) that means (1) and it's (1) I
think (1) I think if a child (1) sometimes feels
they've got a permanent exclusion (1) on their
record it's just a heavy weight around their
shoulders.
1021. R: [Mmm hm]
1022. W: It's (1) it's going with them wherever
they go (1) that's.
1023. R: [Yeah]
1024. W: still on their school record. (1)
Whereas (2) FAP or (1) they've they've not been
permanently excluded
1025. R: Mm hmm
1026. W: and they've got a chance for a fresh
start. (2) So I think (1) I think they feelings going
through FAP rather than a (1) a permanent
staff collectively

EMPATHY
UNSTANDING

speaking for Owen?

HOPEFUL

impact_ PX

FAP systems are "elem" and "it"

FAP systems can be inconvenient for schools,

Powerless to FAP system

Uncertainty around FAP systems

Systems don't help

schools can't support

FAP says no

305
1052. W: [Yeah] [,] cos there's now an early intervention panel and things like that so [ ] fingers crossed.
1053. R: Right ok (,) and that early intervention panel is (, ) erm separate to like the (, )
1054. W: The pa- the actual panel.
1055. R: The actual panel (,) Ok and would you go to the early [intervention]
1056. W: Er (,) no it's the principal (,) oh oh in fact infact I'm not sure if it goes to (,) I don't know how much on it cos I don't (,) really know [yet it's]
1057. R: [Yeah yeah yeah]
1058. W: It's literally only just been [discussed at secondary heads]
1059. R: [Oh ok (,) ok]
1060. W: and then it's it's this month will be the first one.
1061. R: Ah [right]
1062. W: [So] (,) I'm not sure (,) myself (,) entirely how it's gonna [work.]
1063. R: [Yeah] ok.
1064. W: But I'm just hoping it's gonna be a better system.
1065. R: Er right (,1) (,) cos I know that there's changes but I don't know that (,) that sort of detail (,) about that (,1) panel. (,) What's that gonna be about then do you think just to talk about what to do?
1066. W: I think I it's making sure that at that early intervention [level that everything's been done.]
1067. R: [Oh ok (,) ok]
1068. W: That everything (1) that could possibly be done for a child at their current [school has]
1069. R: [Yeah yeah yeah]
1070. W: done.
1071. R: Right [I see]
1072. W: Which makes sense.
1073. R: Yeah (,) yeah ok (,) is that monthly then?
1074. W: It will be yeah.
1075. R: (,1) Ok (,) Er (,) yeah cos erm (1) I keep saying swap cos I've got that in my head but [laughs] the (,) cos you said that that system isn't really (,) happening [any more]
1076. W: [No]
1077. R: The swap system.
1078. W: But what we (,) we have (,) like (1) now erm we needed to (,) to have some respite and we needed (,) or couple of our children to (,) go through that [process.]
1079. R: [Yeah]
1080. W: And erm (1) a couple of schools responded so (1) we've got a couple that are
due to go out.

1081. R: Right OK.
1082. W: So (.) we're just doing it now by just managing it between [ourselves.]
1083. R: [Yeah] yeah yeah. (.) And did you say that some schools (2) erm (1) didn't want to sort of carry on with that like formal (1) [swap system]
1084. W: [Yeah] (1) they just wanted to (.) have the agreements between (.) [themselves.]
1085. R: [OK] (1) What do you (.) why do you think that was (.) that they didn't wanna (1) have like that (.) they way it had been?
1086. W: (1) Erm (3) I just thought some people just didn't think that that (1) that (2) system worked (or)
1087. R: Right.
1088. W: I think erm (3) yeah I just I just think some of the (.) the schools (.) yeah no I'll tell you what it was they changed the protocol.
1089. R: Ok.
1090. W: About (1) the (2) the register marks and (.) and legally the child then had to go on roll at your school and things like (that.)
1091. R: Right.
1092. W: Which would cause a school a lot of complications (3) Erm (1) so (.) I think that was an element of a lot of people (.) (clicking out)
1093. R: Right.
1094. W: (1) Erm (1)
1095. R: So the (1) school that they went to (.) on a swap (.) they would have to go on roll?
1096. W: Yeah.
1097. R: Ok.
1098. W: Mm (.) yeah (.) so (.) and I think cos they changed some of the protocols (.) I think it put (.) a few of the schools off (.)
1099. R: [Right]
1100. W: So I don't (3) (.) I don't wanna speak for them because it's a (.) but
1101. R: [No yeah]
1102. W: like (1) it was at that point that some schools then didn't opt in.
1103. R: Mm hm.
1104. W: To swap.
1105. R: Ok. (.) And would that make it more complicated if they were on roll there you think?
1106. W: (2) It does make it more complicated
1107. R: [Mm hmhm]
1108. W: Yeah if a child (.) comes on to your school role.
1109. R: [Okay]
1110. W: Erm (3) there's there's all (.) kinds of things they're then (1) accounted for and (.) I think like on your (.) your sensor and stuff like

⇒ Awareness: what she is saying to me

⇒ Protocol changed so schools not wanting to do swap

⇒ Need of school other than child

⇒ Because they would be accountable for their education?

⇒ Aware what she is saying to me?

⇒ Defensive "Standing by the schools?"
1111. R: Ok.
1112. W: (1) But erm (...) but (...) it's erm (1) the
1113. the the process itself (1) erm (1) when we had
1114. those (...) the the the actual panel (...) I thought it
1115. was alright.
1116. W: Yes (...) so (...) yeah we just build
1117. good relationships with
1118. R: Yeah yeah.
1119. W: colleagues in other schools and just
1120. R: Ok.
1121. W: then try and say can (...) can you help
1122. us out (...) or
1123. R: Yeah.
1124. W: vice versa can we
1125. R: Yeah.
1126. W: The (...) because the process (...) sometimes (...) can be really successful you
1127. now)
1128. R: [Right] (right) (right).
1129. W: Like I've said (...) to you before we've
1130. sent (...) kids out
1131. R: Mm hmm
1132. W: to other schools (...) and (...) they've
1133. the've really wanted to come back
1134. R: Yeah.
1135. W: they've come back and they've
1136. made it work better
1137. R: Ok.
1138. W: Erm (...) or they've they've gone to
1139. another school and been successful at [that
1140. school]
1141. R: [Right]
1142. W: and then they've gone on roll there.
1143. R: Ok. (...) What would be more (...) I
1144. common do you think is it more that they
1145. realise they wanna come back here or that (...) that they realise (...) they wanna go somewhere
1146. else?
1147. W: Most common (...) for here Xschool
1148. wise (1)
1149. R: Ok.
1150. W: Yeah (...) they they think (2) because
1151. behaviour (...) is so well managed here
1152. R: Mm hmm
1153. W: (1) We have (...) we have this element
1154. of control over the
1155. R: Yeah.
1156. W: the the kids throughout the whole of the
1157. school day. (...) And (...) (as much as you
1158. think (...) children wouldn't like that (...) they
1159. actually do.
1160. R: Yeah.

Need to work together

Purpose of swaps - to help them or to help the child?

Power

Sounds like this is not a mutual agreement?

Multiple purposes of a swap??

Flood

High expectations

Authority/power: Control over the kids?

Assumptions

Speaking to the kids
1144. W: And if we (...) we send them to (...) other schools (...) and (...) sometimes they (...) I (...) I feel bad saying this (...) because (...) but behaviour might not be as good (as it is here)
1145. R: Yeah (!) yeah
1146. W: Erm (2) they don't (.) they don't like that it's then (.) erm (1) you'd think like (1) that (...) cos naughty children (.) often find (.) other naughty children (laugh) (.) but (...) erm (2)
1147. yeah they (.) they tend to want to come back
1148. R: Yeah
1149. W: Yeah
1150. R: Ok
1151. W: It's (1) strange isn't it (laugh)
1152. R: I suppose it's positive in that way that they kinda realise (1) what they (.) what they like about it here (.) I suppose and
1153. W: [Yeah (.) yeah] (.) and that's (the whole point of it]
1154. R: [what they miss]
1155. W: Yeah (.) cos we always (.) like to hope that we'll get them back
1156. R: Yeah (laugh)
1157. W: They're our kids you know (.) Erm the the (3) the best thing is if they (.) they go away they learn a lesson (.) and (.) and we've had we've had many kids do that (.) where they've come back and
1158. R: Mm hmm
1159. W: they've then been OK.
1160. R: Yeah yeah (.) OK (.) Well that's positive (2) Er (2) yeah (1) Well (.) yeah I (...) that was all I think that I (...) that I wanted to er (...) just ask and (1) just in a bit more detail.]
Appendix 10: Maps showing composition of analyses (using ‘The Listening Guide’)

a. Owen

---

### Owen: Sections of analysis

#### ‘I just found it stupid’ (line 2)
This theme relates to my perception of Owen’s mixed emotions regarding the entire ‘swap’ process.

Summary of section:
- Mixed emotions
- Injustice
- Frustration & anger

#### ‘Does no one care about me?’ (line 152)
This theme links with my perception of Owen being isolated and without anyone understanding his needs or feelings, throughout the swap process.

Summary of section:
- Isolated
- Unheard
- School as a refuge
- Punishment

#### ‘I’ve started to slowly fade away’ (line 102)
Owen’s feelings of becoming unimportant and forgotten by both peers and adults, as well as feelings of powerlessness are suggested through this theme.

Summary of section:
- Friendships
- Losing contact
- Worthless
- Unimportant
- Missed education
- Shame

#### ‘What kinda parent does that?’ (line 340)
Owen’s difficult relationship with his parents is highlighted in this section. This includes my perception of both positive and negative feelings, which appear to be heightened by the

---

1. Listening for the plot
   - Character, place, events
   - What is missing
   - Salient themes, metaphors & symbols
   - Emotional hot spots
   - Researcher- own feelings and thoughts

2. Listening for the ‘I’
   - First person voice as it speaks of acting and being in the world
   - Creation of ‘I poems’

3. Listening for contrapuntal voices
   - Voices that speak towards the inquiry/research question
   - The interplay of different voices
   - Different ways of speaking about the self
   - Tensions, harmonies and dissonances between different voices

Owen’s contrapuntal voices:
- Understanding
- Incomprehension
- Indifferent
- A conscientious student
- A good friend
- Isolated
- Resilience
- Resignation
- Determination
- Agency
- Powerless
- Anger
- Ashamed
- Proud
- Desperate
- Competitive
### 'swap' process:

**Summary of section:**
- Difficult home life
- Living between two parents
- Caught in the middle
- Guilt
- Only a kid
- Want to make parents proud
- Hopes for the future

### ‘I’m just a smart boy who’s made a stupid mistake’ (line 356)

This theme represents Owen’s perception of himself as a good student, who has made a mistake. My feelings around his determination and resilience are presented, as well as his feeling that he now has a lot to ‘prove’.

**Summary of section:**
- Conscientious student
- Resilience
- Agency
- Determination
- Desperate to prove self

### ‘This is the school I should belong at’ (line 412)

This section presents the positive factors Owen speaks of at his new school.

**Summary of section:**
- The new school - positives
- Encouraging teachers
- Building confidence
- Building peer relationships
- Belonging
- Successful
b. Sarah: Composition of analysis using ‘The Listening Guide’

Sarah: Sections of analysis

‘False promises false hopes’ (line 62)
This section presents Sarah’s feelings of being let down by professionals as well as her ex-husband, both during the ‘swap’ process, and throughout Owen’s school life in general.

Summary of section:
• The incident
• Let down
• Primary school
• Owen’s dad
• Unheard

‘I’m totally in the dark’ (line 1382)
A lack of communication and partnership with professionals throughout Owen’s ‘swap’ is suggested in this section.

Summary of section:
• Lack of communication
• Lack of understanding
• Uncertainty
• Frustration
• Lack of voice

‘I came out shaking to be fair I were mortified’ (line 1668)
This section highlights Sarah’s feelings of powerlessness throughout the ‘swap’ process.

Summary of section:
• First meeting
• Lack of voice
• Being an advocate

1. Listening for the plot
• Character, place, events
• What is missing
• Salient themes, metaphors & symbols
• Emotional hot spots
• Researcher- own feelings and thoughts

2. Listening for the ‘I’
• First person voice as it speaks of acting and being in the world
• Creation of ‘I poems’

3. Listening for contrapuntal voices
• Voices that speak towards the inquiry/research question
• The interplay of different voices
• Different ways of speaking about the self
• Tensions, harmonies and dissonances between different voices

Sarah’s contrapuntal voices:
• Openness  Understanding
• Honesty  Empathy
• Power  Exasperation
• Powerless  Disapproving
• Agency  Pleading
• Victim  Gratitude
• Anger  Knowing
• Resignation  Uncertainty
• Confusion  Incomprehension
• Assertive  Protective
• Vulnerability  Silenced
• Desperation  Responsibility
• Good parent  Accountability
• Regret  Despair
• Frustration  Frustration
• Helpless  Proud
This section highlights my perceptions of Sarah and Owen’s feelings of unease, due to worries about exclusion in the future.

Summary of section:
- Uncertainty: the future
- School as a refuge
- Being insignificant

Here Sarah’s frustrations regarding her desire for Owen’s behaviours to be viewed in context are presented. She speaks of her desires to want to teach him more appropriate ways to manage his emotions.

- Difficult home life
- Caught in the middle
- Parenting challenges
- SEMH needs

Sarah’s contrapuntal voices continued
- Loyal
- Inferiority
- Anxiety
- Ashamed
- Resilience
- Conscientious
- Defensive
- Disappointed
- Guilt
- Confusion
- Humiliation
- Reflection
### Miss Williams: Composition of analysis using ‘The Listening Guide’

#### 1. Listening for the plot
- Character, place, events
- What is missing
- Salient themes, metaphors & symbols
- Emotional hot spots
- Researcher- own feelings and thoughts

#### 2. Listening for the ‘I’
- First person voice as it speaks of acting and being in the world
- Creation of ‘I’ poems

#### 3. Listening for contrapuntal voices
- Voices that speak towards the inquiry/research question
- The interplay of different voices
- Different ways of speaking about the self
- Tensions, harmonies and dissonances between different voices

### Miss Williams’ contrapuntal voices:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Positive</th>
<th>Negative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Power</td>
<td>Powerless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Authority</td>
<td>Knowing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Determination</td>
<td>Uncertainty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Empathy</td>
<td>Recognition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exasperation</td>
<td>Proud</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frustration</td>
<td>Assertive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hope</td>
<td>Professiona</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sympathy</td>
<td>Honesty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dismissive</td>
<td>Disapprov</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Resignation</td>
<td>Advocacy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Responsibility</td>
<td>Defensive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accountability</td>
<td>Guilt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blame</td>
<td>Reflective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Victim</td>
<td>Admiring</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Encouraging</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Positive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Understand</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Incomprehe</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knowing</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knowing</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uncertainty</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Recognition</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Proud</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Assertive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Professiona</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Honesty</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disapprov</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Advocacy</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Defensive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guilt</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reflective</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Admiring</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Miss Williams: Sections of analysis

**‘We always do believe children should have a fresh start’ (line 506)**
Here Miss Williams belief in a ‘fresh start’ for children who have come through FAP are explored.

**Summary of section:**
- The incident
- Being positive
- Permanent exclusion: effects
- First meeting

**‘We consistently have those high expectations and the support’s always there’ (line 337)**
This section explores Miss Williams views regarding the good practice in school, in order to support pupils who have come through FAP.

**Summary of section:**
- Success stories
- High expectations and consistency
- Pastoral support plans
- Relationships with staff
- Student voice
- Parent involvement

**‘It was like I’ve got to make up for what I’ve done’ (948)**
This section explores Miss Williams thoughts regarding the reasons behind Owen’s behaviours.

**Summary of section:**
- A traumatic experience
- A need to be liked
This section presents Miss William’s thoughts around Owen’s possible SEMH needs, as well as her perception of the needs of other FAP pupils.

Summary of section:
- Difficult backgrounds
- SEMH needs
- Interventions
- Positivity: not always enough
- A lesson learned

This section presents Miss William’s views on the FAP systems within the local authority.

Summary of section:
- Failure of SWAPP
- Difficulties with FAP
- Hopes: New FAP systems
Appendix 11: I Poems

a. Owen’s ‘I poem’

On twilight

I just found it stupid

I understand why they did it

I weren’t allowed out

I can’t be caught

I just found it stupid.

I can’t really do much

I were getting someone

I literally just sat there

I were thinking

I wanna get on with my work

I’m wanting to learn.

I were struggling

I couldn’t go out

I’m like stopping

I can’t just sit at home

I like being on the go

I don’t hate it

I like it

I’m just bored

I’ll try and do summat
I’m the one missing out on my learning
I feel like I were restricting everybody.
I didn’t understand.
I can’t understand
I got given
I’ve never
I did what I wanted
I literally
I’d get given
I were sat .
I literally sat
I’m just trying to get on
I ended up knowing
I’d rather talk to someone
I literally got to just sit there
I’m better at maths and English now

**When at home during twilight**

I sat down and did nowt
I’d do that homework
I’d have nowt to do
I were on twilight
I’m missing out
I fly apart
I’ve started to slowly fade away
I’ve obviously not been able to
I’m now just left out
I think what’s the point

**Before twilight - peers**

I’d meet up with them
I were just thinking before oh they don’t care

**Peers seeing him during twilight**

I’d see ‘em
I’d see ‘em

**Twilight**

I were doing like little jobs
I did this like art project thing.

**The incident**

I’m the only one
I just thought ignore him
I were being shoved
I ended up doing it
I thought oh nowt’ll happen
I just got told
I end up off school
I spend three days in exclusion
I goes what you don’t know
I’m one who’s been in fight as well
I’ve broken a rib
I’m all right.

**This school**

I’d rather be at this school
I’m getting better education
I’ve got better mates
I’d rather be at a strict school

**Old school**

I were in like second set for English
I weren’t being challenged

**Now**

I’m like getting challenging work
I’ve moved up to first set

**Old school**

I’d cry me eyes out
I’d do everything I could

**This school**

I’ve never s heard a word
I were in top set
I still haven’t been moved down
I’m alright at it.
I’ve shown ’em
I’ve made a mistake
I’m just a smart boy who’s made a stupid mistake.

I like all me teachers.

I followed Xpupil on my first day

I got me own plan

I didn’t know anyone

I started to kinda make some friends

I just started going with friends

I’ll try and make friends

I think of it as a competition

I’m trying to learn

I’ve been described as a sponge

I’m that person

I’ll take it in best I can

I just take it as a complement.

**Being told about the swap**

I were coming here

I got shown round

I got told it don’t matter

I didn’t have to come in

I were at Xnew school that day

I was like oh right

**On twilight**

I’m literally just sitting
I’ll have a kick about
I weren’t benefiting
I were only doing two hours a day
I may as well be sat at home

**The swap**

I got asked
I straight away turned around
I mean it’s a better school
I know that
I got told
I got told
I thought oh alright
I were like leaving everything behind
I thought better school
I’ve got like it’s like a second chance for me.
I won’t take it back
I’ve made a lot more friends
I’ve got a better education
I mean it’s just better
I can do more after school clubs.
I did running
I were on football team

**Home life**
I goes what difference does it make?

I’ve been told now I know

I can’t sleep all night

I’m just scared of going

I once forged a signature

I got dared to

I’m like what kinda parent does that

I once forgot to sign my planner

I thought

I don’t want detention

I forged the signature

I don’t wanna go to Xold school

I were turning round

I’ll just stop at me dad’s

**First day**

I’ve done drama before

I were all right at it.

I did it

I had PE

I heard some of lads

I mean

I think it were football

I mean not one of em tried tormenting me
I got told
I felt happy
I thought this is the school
I should I belong at.
I told me parents
I can’t say owt bad

Now
I play on with lads in my year
I have Xpeer and Xpeer
I didn’t really know them
I might not be where I am today

Future
I just wanna be a lawyer.
I’ve thought with me dad
I always say I wanna be a lawyer
I wanna be like a police officer
I wanna be a high ranking officer
I could be a lawyer
I’ll be making a lot of money.
I know you need English
I always forget other one
I wanna use me brain

(PART 2)
**Good times**

I remember being with me mates

I were doing cross country with ‘em

I literally er took people around

I'd end up having a mess about

I had to take part

I just like all of it.

I’m just enjoying it all

I just really liked it.

I ended up saying

**Twilight**

I miss out on me learning

I can’t even walk

I were missing out

I ended up going to Xtutoring service.

I didn’t want me learning and that to drop down.

I’d get home and do it straight away

I’m top set for everything.

I’m gonna go straight back there

I were on twilight.

I thought I may as well try it.

I tried it and all that

I said I wanna keep going
I were going five times a week

I got two footballs

I still play with ‘em now.

I also did it through Christmas

I know it’d benefit me

I want to play out

**Current situation**

I say to her it’s my decision

I go out with a lot more people

I do a lot more things

I wouldn’t have known if I’d never made that mistake.

I’ll catch bus with ‘em

I don’t see ‘em out side

I don’t think she’s happy

I’ll walk it down to me dad’s.

I’ll ring somebody up

I were sick on Tuesday.

I didn’t get sent home.

I’ve had a cold for a while.

I literally just got rid of it

**Football**

I play for Xteam

I train at Xplace.
I’ve just always been into it

I joined that team

I’ll give it a shot.

I’ve stuck with it

I hate it.

I’m used to waking up

I would do me football match

I’ll tell ‘em what time kick off is

I’ll just look at my phone

I’ll end up ringing ‘em

I’m on me way

**Comparing this school and old school**

I mean you could mess about

I think this school is a lot more organized

I don’t mind it really

I don’t understand

I’ve only ever got like one or two EL’s.

I prefer way it is here

I were six months behind

I just couldn’t find point

I kept getting all the languages mixed up

I don’t think I’ve ever put it on red.

**Starting the new school**
I think it happens to everybody

I think ev- like everybody's just watching you

I really weren’t bothered

I’d rather be friends

I think it it’s like not a good way but it’s not a bad way

I got my time my first time ta- my own timetable my second day

I heard some of lads

I said

I’m thinking

I ended up with me own timetable

I’d always meet up with older lads

I started with more and more of me lessons

I’d get curious

I’d start talking

I’ve ended up in with me friendship group

I’d walk it home with ’em
b. Sarah’s I Poem

**On twilight/FAP**

I’ll apologise
I got assured
I don’t know
I got told
I only got a shortened version
I managed to get hold of it
I did the right thing
I wouldn’t tell them the source
I’ll be honest with you
I’m aware police could have been called
I’d heard nothing
I didn’t know
I showed the video
I were in touch with Xschool wellbeing service
I appreciate (. ) Ow- it weren’t practical
I don’t think
I gets a phone call
I’d no idea
I’m trying to think
I don’t know
I don’t think
I don’t know

**First meeting at the new school**

I totally disagree
I’m not saying
I do disagree
I were like no
I do understand
New school
I ain’t got a problem
I’m not saying
I said that’s an aggressive move
I know that too
I says (. ) yes
I keep saying
I do think that (. ) he’s not an angel
I phoned school up

Problems with Owen’s dad
I’m not saying
I’ve been there
I’ve been threatened
I’m not saying
I’m not saying
I left his dad
I’m not saying
I’m not saying

New school
I wouldn’t have allowed
I turned round
I forgot what it were
I don’t know
I’ve had words
I don’t know

Owen- caught in the middle
I couldn’t understand it
I didn’t (. ) understand it
I think he’s he’s (. ) seeing bits
I have heard of a few incidents
I I can’t (. ) do anything
I think he’s like me
I’m not going to say to you
I can tell you when
I’ve explained
I’m not that person
I’ve acknowledged you
I’ve give him a reason
I’m not scared
I’ll tell them
I’ve made a mistake
I’m human
I don’t know
I’ve offered (. ) to take Owen
I meant well
I’m thinking (. ) my god

**Difficulties with Owen’s dad**
I used to do scouting
I was scout leader
I quit
I couldn’t guarantee the safety

**Communication/relationships with new school**
I’ve only ever met
I’m not gonna not challenge something
I thought it were unacceptable
I knew you’d been in
I don’t know

**Difficulties parenting with Owen’s dad**
I couldn’t notify Owen
I could’ve prepared
I couldn’t.
I say it how it is
I will answer honestly
I tell you no lies
I’ve got nowt to hide.
I’ll be honest
I’ve had dogs
I’ve I’ve let him into my home
I’ve seen him kick me dogs
I can’t say
I’m not saying
I’m the best one
I don’t lie
I don’t mean
I’ll be honest
I dreaded
I knew full well
I don’t know
I do know
I can only go

**Owen and friends**
I’m encouraging him
I don’t know.
I honestly don’t know
I don’t know
I caught him

**Difficulties parenting with dad**
I’ll tell you something
I’ve got two children
I used to (1) make stories up.
I couldn’t understand
I went no
I could quite easily
I know full well
I know that
I’ve no idea
I’m not saying
I don’t condone it

**Past: Difficult relationship with Owen’s dad**

I got them out.
I can’t tell you
I’ve tried
I left his dad
I had had a battle
I just left
I’ve had problems
I used to encourage
I just (,) don’t know

**Difficulties parenting with dad**

I refused
I stayed away
I don’t want
I kept away
I respect
I have brought Owen up
I don’t know
I’m having to give up my time
I’m expected
I didn’t say anything
I didn’t want to go
I took him
I got told
I owe money
I have seen
I walked away

**FAP process**

I appreciate
I don’t think
I know
I were doing
I come across (2) erm (.) being clever
I know things
I’m totally in the dark
I just hope
I don’t want
I’ll be honest

**Communication with new school**

I’m subordinate to (. ) him
I know
I’m not being treat equal
I’m (. ) not being told
I don’t know
I ain’t been able

**Her own childhood**

I’d gone (. ) absolutely crying
I swore down
I went through

**Difficulties parenting**

I’m helpless
I remember not being able

**The incident**

I were prepared
I knew
I’m not saying
First meeting in school
I explained it
I appreciate
I get treated
I’d gone in there
I still live with hope
I come out shaking
I were mortified
I weren’t allowing

Difficulties parenting with dad
I have noticed
I sent one back
I I knew I’d get no
I didn’t get a no
I didn’t get no money.
I can’t hear
I’m not deaf.
I see (1) is fear
I don’t normally swear
I went (. ) no
I’m keeping quiet
I [see Owen]
I see that
I’m allowing him to bully me
I’m not sticking up for myself
I don’t want that confrontation
I don’t know
I am obviously (. ) fighting back.
I’m not scared
I’ll be honest
I’ve never done.
Parenting alone

I find myself in a situation
I don’t know
I knew he’d not seen me [angry.]
I know full well
I can manage

Difficulties parenting with dad

I told ‘em
I got given
I let him know.
I don’t know
I’ve ignored it
I’ve managed
I’ve got a feeling
I’ve asked
I’ll be honest
I’m saying lame excuse

Sarah as an individual

I will go that extra mile
I’ll do it
I know I’m busy
I’ll help
I can’t always do it.
I won’t say (.) [no.]

Difficulties parenting with dad

I lost my erm (2) step dad
I didn’t take time away from him
I were working
I were actually working
I can’t tell him
I should be able
I can’t
I couldn’t wait
I thought it’d be easier
I didn’t believe them
I want a quiet life.
I don’t want a (.) Corrination Street
I want (.) quiet life.

**Hopes for Owen for the future**
I hope
I just hope
I can’t see
I know what I’ve taught my child
I would never (.) have done that
I’ve not been an angel
I would be asking
I notified school.

**Inconvenience of ‘twilight’**
I know about BBC [bitesize and stuff]
I’m at a stalemate
I’ll be honest
I’ll never forget

**Effects of early life on parenting**
I also pressurized meself
I were in a (.) bad state
I learned
I didn’t put too much pressure on
I do say
I’ve always helped

**Current relationship with Owen**
I’ve always said
I think it’s a lie.

I’m more than happy

I don’t know answer

I personally encouraged it

I don’t know.

**Difficulties parenting with dad**

I’ve had to sign

I’ve gotta (. ) be respectful

I know

I’ve filled them in

I’m not saying

I’ve done it to be helpful

I’m not gonna win

I’m not with him 24/7

**Sarah as a parent**

I’d have gone back

I look at the impact

I can tell you

I don’t have to (2) be clever about it.

**FAP process**

I think

I don’t think

I weren’t getting phone calls

I got refused the bus pass

I got accused

I weren’t (. ) allowed

I’d have challenged it sooner.
c. Miss Williams’ I Poem

The incident
I spoke to the vice principal
I haven’t seen the footage

First meeting
I got parents in
I think they frequently (1) argue.
I sent him out
I brought him back in
I said to mum and dad
I have to tell them

His first days
I should have introduced you
I said you must
I’m not sure

Incident with a peer
I don’t think
I seem to remember
If I’m really honest
I can’t remember

Talking about the incident
I talked through the incident
I think he liked it
I did his reintegration meeting
I’ve not mentioned it
I think’s helpful

What is behind it all?
I think he
I think maybe
I don’t know
I’m not sure
I couldn’t say

**The time he is having**
I said he could
I just see him
I just walk
I check
I’m looking
I don’t see him
I think

**What works?**
I know obviously
I met with Owen’s parents
I say to them

**SWAP/FAP system**
I’ve been familiar with
I don’t know
I think
I’ve seen it
I went to them
I’m sure]
I always do believe
I’d phone
I know
I’ve met

**Hopes for future**
I just hope
I’m just hoping
I don’t really know
I can’t imagine now
I can’t imagine him
I had to talk about it
I know
I’m hoping

**What works/first days**

I think a lot of people can relate
I couldn’t say
I could show you

**FAP**

I’ve kinda got the understanding
I get like it’s it’s really hard
I don’t know
I’ve seen
I can meet you again

**Part 2- What works**

I think
I was saying
I’ll (. ) go through (. ) the reasons
I think
I can’t remember

**Blips**

I think
I did some restorative work

**The incident**

I can’t think
I think
I was one of the only people

**First meeting**

I said to them

**FAP**

I’m not sure
I’m just hoping
I don’t wanna speak
I thought it was OK
I feel bad
Appendix 12: Example of part of the process to identify key 'themes' within Owen's narrative
Appendix 13: Transcript extracts referenced for Miss Williams

**Lines 383-445**

383. W: what happens in other authorities is what we call a managed move.
384. R: Uh huh.
385. W: (1) now (1) the the system that I saw here (.) the way that erm (.) SWAP was done in in Xthis local authority (.)
386. R: Yeah
387. W: was the worst I’d seen.
388. R: Really.
389. W: Yeah. (.) It it really was because (.) to start off with nobody was monitoring it.
390. R: Ok
391. W: (.) High schools were were shifting kids between (.)
392. R: Yeah
393. W: different schools (.) erm (.) sometimes I don’t know if they were being marked right on the register
394. R: yeah
395. W: Erm (.) then (.) erm (.) they’d just fail and then go back to their other school. No [nobody]
396. R: [Right]
397. W: or (.) some schools would take more in (.) than others (.)
398. R: Yeah
399. W: or (.) some schools would take any at all. (.) And (1) it was so (.) very disorganised you what it was (.) it was being used as a (.) to say that it was an intervention before you permanently excluded [a child]
400. R: [Ok]
401. W: or (.) some schools would take any at all. (.) And (1) it was so (.) very disorganised you what it was (.) it was being used as a (.) to say that it was an intervention before you permanently excluded [a child]
402. R: [Ok]
403. W: or
404. R: yeah
405. W: before you put them through to Fair Access so
406. R: yeah
407. W: it was like oh we’ve done that
408. R: Yeah
409. W: we’ve sent them to another school. (.) So it it was nobody was really monitoring it or supporting those children
410. R: Yeah
411. W: or those families who were going through [SWAPP.]
412. R: [Mm hmm.]
413. W: The the most effective I’ve seen it work is in Xcity
414. R: [Ok.]
415. W: [in (.) over in Xlocal authority.
416. R: (1) and they call it a managed move?
417. W: They call it a managed move (.) and what they have is they have a lady (.) who (.) erm is er ve very experienced she she worked for behaviour support (.) erm and most other authorities have behaviour support [and]
W: This local authority doesn’t.
R: Yeah.
W: I think they do for primary school children [but not for children at high
school.]
W: (1) So she is in contact with all the head teachers
R: mm
W: and she co-ordinates managed [moves.]
R: [mm]
W: And so every single child on a managed move she has to know
[about it]
R: [Ok (.) yeah]
W: and then what happens is she goes to the initial [meetings]
R: [mm hmm]
W: with parents (.) and then she makes the decision whether the managed
move has failed or not.
R: Ah I see right.
W: (.) So it’s a person that works for the local authority which is (.) difficult
now because you’ve got so many [schools]
R: [Yes]
W: that are academies and
R: Yeah
W: they don’t buy into (.) that. (.) So that’s the most effective I’ve seen
it because the thing was (.) when she came to meetings (.) you literally had to
evidence what interventions [you’re putting in place]
R: {Right]
W: to try and make it work.
R: Yeah Ok.
W: Erm where as the system here wasn’t like that as I say it was just a
[let’s say]
R: [yeah]
W: that we’ve done a SWAPP and
R: yeah
W: we’re not bothered if it works or not.

Lines 478- 488

W: (1) and then other schools then said (.) erm (.) we said we’d take part.
Xold school did. (.) I think Xschool did. But
R: Yeah
W: we’re too far away [from eachother]
R: [yeah]
W: and the problem is if you are going to put a child on a SWAP
R: Yeah
W: it’s (.) you can’t it can’t set them up to fail [from the minute that they]
R: [yeah course]
W: you know knowing that they can’t get on the bus [there or]
R: [yeah yeah yeah yeah]

W: it’s gonna cause their family stress getting them there cos then it’s (.) it doesn’t serve [it’s purpose.]

Lines 1116-1134

1116. W: [Yes] (.) so (.) yeah we just build good relationships with
1117. R: Yeah yeah
1118. W: colleagues in other schools and just
1119. R: Ok
1120. W: then try and say can (.) can you help us out (.) or
1121. R: Yeah
1122. W: Vice versa can we
1123. R: Yeah.
1124. W: The (.) because the process (.) sometimes (.) can be really [successful you know]
1125. R: [Yeah (.)] right [.] right.
1126. W: Like I’ve said (.) to you before we’ve sent (.) kids out
1127. R: Mm hmm
1128. W: to other schools (.) and (.) they’ve they’ve really wanted to come back
1129. R: Yeah
1130. W: they’ve come back and they’ve made it work here.
1131. R: OK.
1132. W: Erm (. ) or they’ve they’ve gone to another school and been successful at
[that school]
1133. R: [Right]
1134. W: and then they’ve gone on roll there

Lines 1078-1082

1078. W: But what we (.) we have (.) like (1) now erm we needed to (.) to have
some respite and we needed (.) er couple of of our children to (1) to go through
that [process.]
1079. R: [Yeah]
1080. W: And erm (1) a couple of schools responded so (1) we’ve got a couple
that are due to go out.
1081. R: Right OK.
1082. W: So (.) we’re just doing it now by just managing it between [ourselves.]
Appendix 14: Summary: The EP role in supporting CYP at risk of exclusion

- Supporting schools to meaningfully involve CYP in decisions that affect them.
- Supporting schools to meaningfully involve parents and carers in decisions that affect them and their children.
- Helping schools to consider and re-address the power imbalances that may hinder working in ‘collaboration’ with CYP and families.
- Use of narrative techniques in consultation with CYP, families and staff in order to listen, understand, problem solve, understand the past and create a preferred vision for the future.
- Use of consultation to work in partnership with schools, CYP and families, to develop a holistic view of the child and understand behaviour as a complex interaction between the child and wider systemic factors.
- Working with schools at a systems level in order to create an ethos which develops resilience and a sense of belonging for CYP (e.g. through the development of policies and evidence-informed practices at a preventative level).
- Supporting schools to implement ‘behaviour management’ strategies that draw on ‘evidence informed’ practice.
- Support for staff wellbeing and resilience.
- EPs have an important role in continuing to reflect on their own practice, in order to identify ideas, practices and support mechanisms that enable CYP and families to ‘move beyond regimes of knowledge-making found to be oppressive, enabling them to navigate more successfully in their lives’ (Billington & Williams, 2017). This must include a critical consideration of current discourses and personal values.